Ancestors

of

Esther Lillian Frazee

by

Carlyle E. Hystad

Ancestors of Esther Lillian Frazee

by

Carlyle E. Hystad

Second Edition

February, 2019

Ancestors of Esther Lillian Frazee

Introduction

Deep Roots in America

This document is my effort to describe the information I have collected over many years regarding my mother's ancestors. I have collected an enormous amount of information, with thousands of names and dates and places, which can be rather boring and meaningless and confusing. So I have attempted to present the information in a way that will be meaningful and useful, and maybe even intriguing, enjoyable, and educational.

Esther's father was Morris Clifford Frazee, and I have traced some of his ancestors back to the Pilgrims' Plymouth Colony and beyond. And an ancestor was one of the first settlers of Staten Island in what was then New Netherland.

Esther's mother was Pearl May Finley, and I have traced several of her ancestors back to the Pilgrims' Plymouth Colony, and at least four of her ancestors came over on the Mayflower. One ancestor is likely the only person to have lived in the Jamestown settlement in Virginia and subsequently came to Plymouth Colony on the Mayflower.

And at least two of her ancestors survived shipwrecks while crossing the Atlantic!

Esther's Grandparents

Esther's father's parents were Moses Robinette Frazee and Harriet Ellen Morris.
Esther's mother's parents were Andrew Theodore Finley, and Mary Elizabeth Rose Smith.

I have been able to obtain information on ancestors of all four grandparents. Initially I did not have any solid information on Andrew Theodore Finley's ancestors. He claimed that he was an orphan and was raised by foster parents, and none of his descendants had any information about his family. But I discovered that his claim of being an orphan was not quite accurate; he knew and had contact with extended family, including his father, his grandparents, his brothers and others. I have obtained information on these relatives, although the information I have about Finley's ancestors is much more limited than for the other three.

I have information on all eight parents of the four grandparents (Frazee, Morris, Finley and Smith), and on fourteen of the sixteen grandparents of these four grandparents (Esther's great, great grandparents). Twelve of these fourteen great, great grandparents were born in America, between 1753 and 1787. A few of Esther's ancestors have been traced back as far as twelve generations, to the mid-1500s.

I have identified the European country of origin for many of our ancestors. And the information provides a good basis for understanding the history of these ancestors in America. It shows the steady movement of these families from the Plymouth Colony, Massachusetts Bay Colony and the New Netherland Colony, and from later British colonial settlements in Connecticut, New York, New Jersey, Pennsylvania and Virginia, and then moving west to Kentucky, Ohio, Indiana, Illinois, Minnesota and North Dakota.

Importance of Maternal Ancestors

When doing genealogical research it is not an uncommon practice to focus primarily on the male line of the ancestors, such as Hystad and Frazee in my case, but each of the 87 family names I have identified (and all those not yet identified) are equally our ancestors genetically. And it is highly likely that our cultural inheritance has been influenced more by our maternal ancestors than the paternal side, because the mothers were more likely to influence their children's practices and habits in language, food, dress, social interactions, education, etc. So Mary Smith, Harriet Morris, Abigail Wilson, Sarah Davis, Almira Cotton, Rebecca Wolcott, Alcinda Coudry, Ann Mills, Sarah James, and Priscilla Morris may be more important in shaping who we are, than Mr. Frazee, Mr. Finley, Mr. Smith, Mr. Morris, Mr. Wilson, Mr. Davis, Mr. Cotton, Mr. Wolcott, Mr. Coudry, Mr. Mills or Mr. James.

Mainly American

Although I have not been able to determine the country of origin of all of Esther's ancestors, this seems rather irrelevant at this point, because all of her Frazee, Morris and Smith ancestors have been in America since before the United States gained its independence from Great Britain, and many go back nearly 400 years in this land. Other than Native Americans, it is not possible to be more "American" than these three grandparents, and very little of the unique culture of the "old countries" has survived those 400 years of Americanization.

Myth or Reality

During my childhood and beyond I was told various stories about our Frazee ancestors. Some of these came from my mother, some from her brother Morris, some from grandpa Frazee, and some from sources I've forgotten. The following pages provide answers to whether these stories are myth or reality.

I was told that we have two ancestors who signed the Declaration of Independence, with the last name of Morris. It is correct that two gentlemen by the name of Morris signed the Declaration, and that we have two lines of ancestors named Morris, but are we descended from these famous Morris families?

I was told that we were related to Jesse James of bank robbery infamy. We do have ancestors with the last name of James, including a William James. And Jesse had an ancestor named William James. Are we cousins of Jesse?

I was told or read somewhere that grandpa Frazee's great grandpa (maybe more than one great) came to this country from France with General Lafayette during the Revolutionary War and fought the British while serving as an officer under Lafayette. Did we lose our ability to speak French somewhere along the way?

I was told that we had some Dutch ancestors. We did have ancestors who lived in the early Dutch colony called New Netherland, in what is now New York, New Jersey and Deleware, and part of Connecticut. But were they Dutch? And did they wear wooden shoes?

I was told that we had some Scottish ancestors, or did they just like to drink Scotch?

I was told that Indians were still scalping people when our ancestors were settling in America. Did any of our ancestors lose their scalps? Or did any of our ancestors scalp Indians for the bounty money?

This book will also answer such other intriguing questions as:

Did any of our ancestors fight on the "Patriot" or the "Loyalist" side in the War for Independence?

What roles did our ancestors play in the Civil War?

Why was one of our ancestors sentenced to death and hanged by the authorities in one of the Puritan colonies in America?

Why was one of our ancestors the basis for a character in a Shakespeare play?

History of European Colonization of America

When European countries began their efforts to colonize the Western Hemisphere after Columbus "discovered" the Hemisphere in 1492, there were fifty million to over one hundred million people living in the Hemisphere (according to current best estimates), from northern parts of North America to the southern tip of South America. It is estimated that about 40% of these Natives lived in North America. Native Americans had established cultures, economies and governmental systems throughout the Hemisphere, including almost all parts of what is now the United States. In the first decades after European contacts in the Hemisphere, the native population plummeted due to the death toll from European diseases, particularly smallpox, for which the natives had no immunity.

European colonists liked to pretend that these lands were mainly vacant and were theirs for the taking, or that "savages" were occupying some portions of the land and they should be exterminated, forced to move elsewhere, or "civilized", to make way for the advanced people of Europe. White supremacy (or English supremacy) was generally accepted by the British colonialists. Our ancestors were part of this forced European colonization of land inhabited by Native Americans.
There is no evidence that our ancestors included any Native Americans, based on DNA analysis as well as historical records; they were all Europeans.

To understand when and why our ancestors came to America, it is helpful to have an overview of the history of the major waves of early immigration to America. The population of the colonies that later became the United States grew from zero Europeans in the mid-1500s to 3.2 million Europeans and 700,000 African slaves in 1790, when the first census was taken after the United States colonies gained independence from Britain. At that time, it is estimated that three-fourths of the population was of British descent, with Germans forming the second-largest free ethnic group and making up some 7% of the population.

The first major group of settlers, between 1620 and 1640, were about 20,000 Puritans who emigrated from England, most settling in the New England area of North America. In an event known as the Great Migration, these people became the Yankees of New England, who later spread out to New York and the Upper Midwest.

From 1609 to 1664, some 8,000 Dutch settlers came to New Netherland, which later became New York, New Jersey, Delaware and part of Connecticut.

Between 1645 and 1670, after the British Parliament overthrew the monarchy, about 45,000 Royalists and/or indentured servants left England and settled primarily in the colonies south of New England, including Virginia and the Carolinas,

From about 1675 to 1715, the Quakers made their move, leaving the Midlands, North England and Wales behind for Pennsylvania, New Jersey and Delaware. The Quaker movement became one of the largest religious groups in early colonial America.

Germans migrated early into several colonies but mostly to Pennsylvania, where they made up a third of the population by the time of Independence.

Between about 1710 and 1775, around 250,000 Scotch-Irish left Ulster (the northern province of Ireland) and settled in western Pennsylvania and the mountainous areas of the colonies of Virginia and the Carolinas, including what is now known as West Virginia and eastern Kentucky and Tennessee. These immigrants are called "Scotch-Irish" or "Scots-Irish" in the United States because most of them were originally from Scotland and had been resettled in Northern Ireland, where they had forcefully replaced native Irish in Ulster as part of an English effort to settle Protestants in predominantly Catholic Ireland. These immigrants are credited (or blamed) for much of the illegal efforts to displace Native Americans in the "frontier" areas west of the original 13 States.

The majority of African slaves were brought to the future United States before it gained independence. The numbers are uncertain, but it is estimated that some 300,000 slaves arrived in the colonies before Independence, and about 100,000 were imported in the period between the Revolutionary War and the Civil War. The slave trade was outlawed in 1808, but some illegal trade continued for several years after.

And between 1700 and 1770, about 50,000 European convicts were shipped to North America. Most of these gained their freedom after serving a few years as indentured servants. Most of these convicts were sent to the southern colonies, where cheap labor was in greatest demand.

After the thirteen colonies gained independence from Britain, the colonization of North America continued and accelerated. In the first half of the 1800s, at least 500,000 Germans immigrated to the United States. About 20,000 came in the years 1816-1817, fleeing a famine, and about 60,000 fled to America after the failed Revolutions of 1848.

About 1.8 million Irish immigrated to the United States and Canada during the Great Potato Famine of 1845 - 1850.

From 1850 to 1930, over five million Germans immigrated to the States. From 1880 to 1930, about 5.3 million Italians came, and about 1.5 million Norwegians and Swedes. And over two million Central Europeans, primarily Polish, came during this period.

Immigrants from England, Scotland, and Wales, continued to come to America throughout the colonial period, and they continued to flow into the new United States after independence as the United States gave preferential treatment to British immigrants (while attempting to prevent immigration from Aisa).

Sources of Information on Ancestors

There have been many sources for the information on ancestors that I have collected over the years. The most important are:

- A Frazee bible that was passed down through several Frazee generations and was in the possession of Esther's brother Morris when I saw it. It contained family names and some dates, going back to Esther's great, great grandparents, Moses Frazee and Priscilla Morris.

- A document provided to me by May Smith Hystad (Alfred Hystad's wife), who was Esther's cousin and a descendant of Esther's great grandparents, Samuel Smith and Almira Cotton. The document tracked the Smith family back to the Plymouth Colony, and I have been able to verify almost all of the information in that document.

- Information provided to me by Shirley Thompson, Esther's niece, who had received papers from members of the Morris family, with information on the Morris family going back to Colonial times in Pennsylvania.

- The United States Decennial Census records, which I initially searched in the National Archives in Washington, DC, and subsequently searched online through Ancestry.com. These records provide key information on family relationships, births, deaths, place of residence, etc. for the years 1850 through 1930. Census records for 1790 through 1840 show names and location of heads of household only,

and are not useful for determining family relationships, but are helpful to verify location of family heads at ten year intervals.

- Many reports on the results of private genealogical studies, primarily focused on an individual's ancestors, obtained from many sources, including the Library of Congress, the Daughters of the American Revolution Library, the Mormon Church libraries, many World Wide Web sites, and from personal correspondence with distant cousins.

- The work of the General Society of Mayflower Descendants, which has produced detailed records of many of the descendants of the Mayflower passengers, through at least the first five generations. This work makes it easy to trace ancestors to the Mayflower if you are able to connect your ancestors to any of the hundreds of thousands of descendants documented through the first five generations. It is estimated that there are now about 30 million descendants of the Mayflower passengers, so this is not a particularly exclusive group.

Readers should keep in mind that this research is a work in progress, and new or different information may be discovered at any time. Although I have included here only the genealogical information that I am reasonably confident is accurate, we are dealing with information that spans hundreds of years, and it is likely that some of it may be incorrect or misleading. Readers should also keep in mind that even when authentic documentation shows parent and child relationships, such relationships may not be genetic, particularly regarding relationships between father and child. Modern DNA studies have shown that in some communities over 20 percent of documented father-child relationships are not supported by DNA evidence (in some cases not even the mother knew for sure who was the father). Of course there is a much greater level of certainty in mother-child relationships, but cases of undocumented adoptions by families, particularly of babies born of other family members out of wedlock, are not impossible. Because of this uncertainty, some genealogists have gone to DNA testing to determine or confirm family relationships.

Readers are encouraged to continue this research effort, to find missing links, to add new historical perspective, or correct errors. You will discover that doing genealogical research is a very interesting way of learning history.

Presentation

In the subsequent chapters I will trace our ancestors from their earliest days in America up through their arrival and settlement in McKenzie County, North Dakota, where Esther was born in 1912, and where her last living grandparent died in 1932. In some cases I start with information available about the lives of these ancestors before they came to America. I will identify the ancestors of each of Esther's four grandparents.

Rather than taking you backwards through time, I will try to follow the tracks that took our ancestors from Europe to North Dakota over a period of over 300 years, from the early 1600s to 1932. The history of our ancestors is also the history of

much of the European migration to and in America, and the forced displacement of Native Americans.

I have not provided the specific sources of the data presented, because it is very time-consuming and often quite boring. But if any reader is interested in the source for particular data, I will be happy to attempt to provide that source or even a copy of the source material. I have hundreds of documents, primarily in digital form, which makes it more feasible to identify and pass along specific source material.

Second Edition

This Second Edition contains some new information that has been obtained in the past ten years since the First Edition was written, as well as improved or corrected presentation of previous information. For example, it includes information about Samuel P. Smith's service in the Civil War, which was not known at the time of the First Edition. This Edition also corrects some typos and other clerical errors.

Chapter 1: An Introduction to Esther's Parents & Grandparents

This chapter provides a brief introduction to Esther's parents and grandparents, for those younger readers who are not familiar with them. In later chapters you will learn much more about them and their ancestors.

Esther's father, Morris Clifford Frazee, came to McKenzie County, North Dakota, in the summer of 1906, and acquired 160 acres of land in what was then pretty much an uninhabited grassy plain. He came by railroad from points east, to Williston, and then walked or hitched wagon rides, to explore available public lands south of the Missouri River. He was late in deciding to make a homestead claim, because most of the best land in the country that was available for homesteading had already been claimed. The more fertile lands in Illinois, Iowa, Wisconsin, Minnesota, and eastern North Dakota were long gone.

He also was a little late in life to be setting off by himself to attempt to start a farm from scratch in the plains of western North Dakota. He was already 37 years old when he decided to quit his soft office job with the railroad and head west.

Morris Clifford did not care much for his given name, and he usually went by his middle name, Clifford, or just his initials, M.C. He also didn't care much for his age. For many years he claimed he was at least five years younger than he really was. Only when he was pushing 90 years did he feel it was preferable to admit his real age.

Morris Clifford's father was Moses Robinette Frazee. (In some documents the name Robinett is spelled without the final "e".) Moses was born and raised in Ohio, and worked on a farm in his youth, but then spent most of his working years at various jobs on the railroad. Moses had grown up on the family farm in Ohio, and helped his brothers run the farm after his father died at a young age. His ancestors were among the first settlers in what is now Massachusetts, New York, New Jersey, and Ohio. His earliest ancestors in America were in the Plymouth Colony by 1629.

Although Moses grew up on a farm, his son Morris Clifford grew up in town, while Moses worked as a railroad conductor, and Morris Clifford had little first-hand experience with farming, at least not until he tried to survive as a farmer in western North Dakota.

Morris Clifford's mother, Harriet Ellen Morris, was the youngest child of a large family. She grew up on a farm in Ohio, where her father had settled after moving from Pennsylvania. Her ancestors were among the first settlers in New Jersey, Pennsylvania, Kentucky and Ohio. Her ancestors were in America before the War for Independence.

Harriet Ellen Morris married Moses Frazee in 1861, when she was 19 years old. She bore four children, two girls and then two boys, and had the job of raising them pretty much on her own as Moses was traveling about the mid-west on some of the

many passenger trains which were the primary mode of transportation at the time. They moved to Illinois when the kids were still young, and lived there until Moses was ready to retire from railroad work. They then moved to a small farm in southern Indiana, and Moses died there in 1905. Meanwhile the boys had grown and left home and were on their own, but the two daughters continued to live at home (and they later came to McKenzie County). After Moses died, Harriet Ellen moved to McKenzie County where she lived her remaining years.

Esther's mother, Pearl May Finley, came to McKenzie County, North Dakota when she was 20 years old. She came with her parents in 1907 when her father homesteaded 152 acres adjoining the Frazee homestead. The family, including her mother and younger sister, moved from a farm a short distance north of Fergus Falls, in Otter Tail County, Minnesota. Pearl was used to the hard work of farm life, but was disappointed with the move to North Dakota. She missed the trees and lakes of Otter Tail County, but mainly she missed the attention she received from the young men in Otter Tail County, which was a bustling place compared with the barren plains of McKenzie County.

Pearl's father was Andrew Theodore Finley. He had come to Otter Tail County when he was about 20 years old, all the way from the far northern part of New York state, right on the Canadian border. It is likely that he came to Otter Tail County with a group of farmers from upstate New York who came to homestead in Otter Tail County. He had been working as a "servant" and farm hand for a farm family in St. Lawrence County, New York, since he was a small lad. His father apparently had abandoned Theodore and his two brothers after their mother died. Andrew Theodore may have wanted to distance himself from his father, and his grandparents, who continued to live in St. Lawrence County.

Upon arriving in Minnesota, he worked as a farm hand in Western Township, Otter Tail County, just down the road a piece from the Samuel Smith farm. Andrew Theodore did not use his first name most of his life; he went by Theodore or A.T., possibly because his father's name was Andrew. Theodore Finley's grandfather came from Ireland in the early 1800s, and his grandmother was from Canada. His ancestors are the only known ancestors of Esther who came to America after it gained independence from Britain.

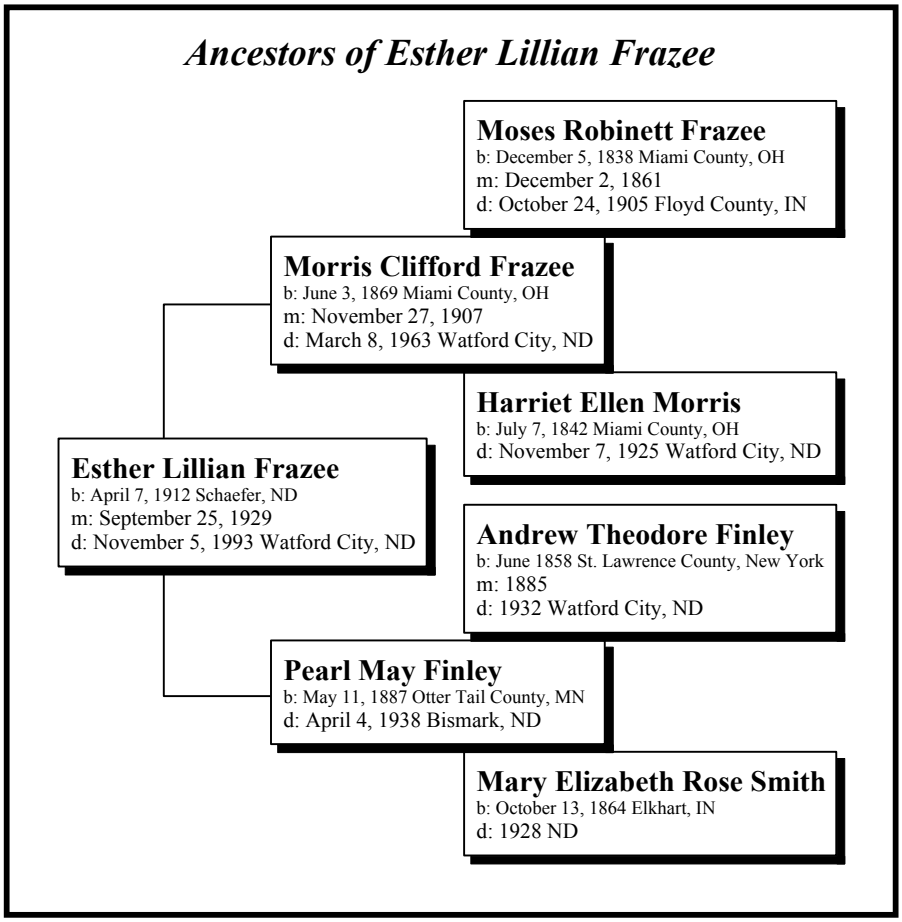
Pearl's mother was Mary Elizabeth Rose Smith. She was the daughter of Samuel and Almira Smith, who had a farm in Western Township, Otter Tail County. The Smith family had come to Minnesota from Indiana, and prior to that had come from Ohio, and Connecticut and Massachusetts. They had been in America since the beginning of British settlements in America, and her ancestors were already well-established in Plymouth Colony when some of the Frazee ancestors arrived there.

Mary Smith married Theodore Finley in 1885, and they farmed in Otter Tail County, where their three children were born. They moved to McKenzie County in 1907, and broke sod to start a new farm and new life. They lived their last years in McKenzie County, where Theodore died, a broken hearted man who knew that he was responsible for the death of his beloved Mary Elizabeth Rose.

Morris Clifford Frazee and Pearl May Finley were married on November 27, 1907, when Pearl was 20 years old, and Morris Clifford was 38 (but he probably claimed to be 33). In the 1910 U.S. Census he reported his age as 36, when he was really 41. They had four children: Alice Irene, Esther Lillian, Morris Robinette, and Vance Milton.

Following is a genealogy chart showing Esther's ancestors through her four grandparents. The following chapters and Appendix A include additional genealogy charts for the Smith, Finley, Frazee and Morris families, to help the reader place the early settlers in the family tree.

Now let's go back in time to our earliest ancestors in America.


Ancestors of Esther Lillian Frazee
Moses Robinett Frazee
b: December 5, 1838 Miami County, OH
m: December 2, 1861
d: October 24, 1905 Floyd County, IN
Morris Clifford Frazee
b: June 3, 1869 Miami County, OH
m: November 27, 1907
d: March 8, 1963 Watford City, ND
Harriet Ellen Morris
b: July 7, 1842 Miami County, OH
d: November 7, 1925 Watford City, ND
Esther Lillian Frazee
b: April 7, 1912 Schaefer, ND
m: September 25, 1929
d: November 5, 1993 Watford City, ND
Andrew Theodore Finley
b: June 1858 St. Lawrence County, New York
m: 1885
d: 1932 Watford City, ND
Pearl May Finley
b: May 11, 1887 Otter Tail County, MN
d: April 4, 1938 Bismark, ND
Mary Elizabeth Rose Smith
b: October 13, 1864 Elkhart, IN
d: 1928 ND

Chapter 2: Jamestown Settlement

Stephen Hopkins

Stephen Hopkins, an ancestor of Esther's grandmother Mary Smith, is one of the more interesting of our ancestors, having lived at the Jamestown colony from 1610 to about 1614, returned to England, and then came with his family to Plymouth on the Mayflower in 1620.

Stephen Hopkins was born about 1582, in England. He married **Mary** (last name unknown; she also is an ancestor of Mary Smith) in about 1604, and had three children, named Elizabeth, Constance, and **Giles**, before he headed on an adventure to help resupply the Jamestown settlement in 1609. He was about 27 years old when he served as a minister's clerk on the vessel *Sea Venture*, which sailed from London on June 2, 1609, bound for Virginia. The *Sea Venture* was one of eight ships in the convoy headed for Jamestown. Unfortunately, the ship was caught in a hurricane in the Atlantic, and was driven ashore on what is now called Bermuda, on July 28. All 150 of the passengers and crew survived the shipwreck, but were marooned on the island for nine months, until they were able to build two smaller boats in which they finally made it to Jamestown on May 24, 1610.

While marooned in Bermuda, our ancestor Stephen was an instigator of a planned uprising against the Governor of the group, apparently because of dissatisfaction with the pace of efforts to get them off the island. For his remarks, he was arrested, tried, and sentenced to death. But apparently he was a persuasive speaker, because he convinced the Governor to pardon him, and he lived to make it to Jamestown. William Strachey's record of this adventure states the following: "But so penitent hee was and made so much moane, alleadging the ruine of his wife and children", that the Governor took pity and pardoned him.

Mr. Stachey's records made their way back to London later in 1610 and the *Sea Venture's* story became public knowledge in England. William Shakespeare drew upon the story to produce his play, *The Tempest*, which includes a major character named *"Stephano"*, presumably based on our ancestor Stephen Hopkins. The character Stephano is a drunken butler who leads an uprising against the ruling Prospero, on an island after a shipwreck caused by a "tempest". *The Tempest* is believed to be Shakespeare's last play written entirely by himself, and its first performance was in November 1611, at the court of King James I.

Jamestown

Stephen Hopkins and the other passengers on the doomed *Sea Venture* arrived in "James Towne" in May 1610, three years after the first Englishmen arrived in May 1607, and he found a settlement that was barely surviving. Jamestown was one of the earliest English attempts to develop permanent English settlements in North America. Jamestown (originally also spelled "James Towne" or "Jamestowne") is located on the James River about 40 miles inland from the Atlantic Ocean and the

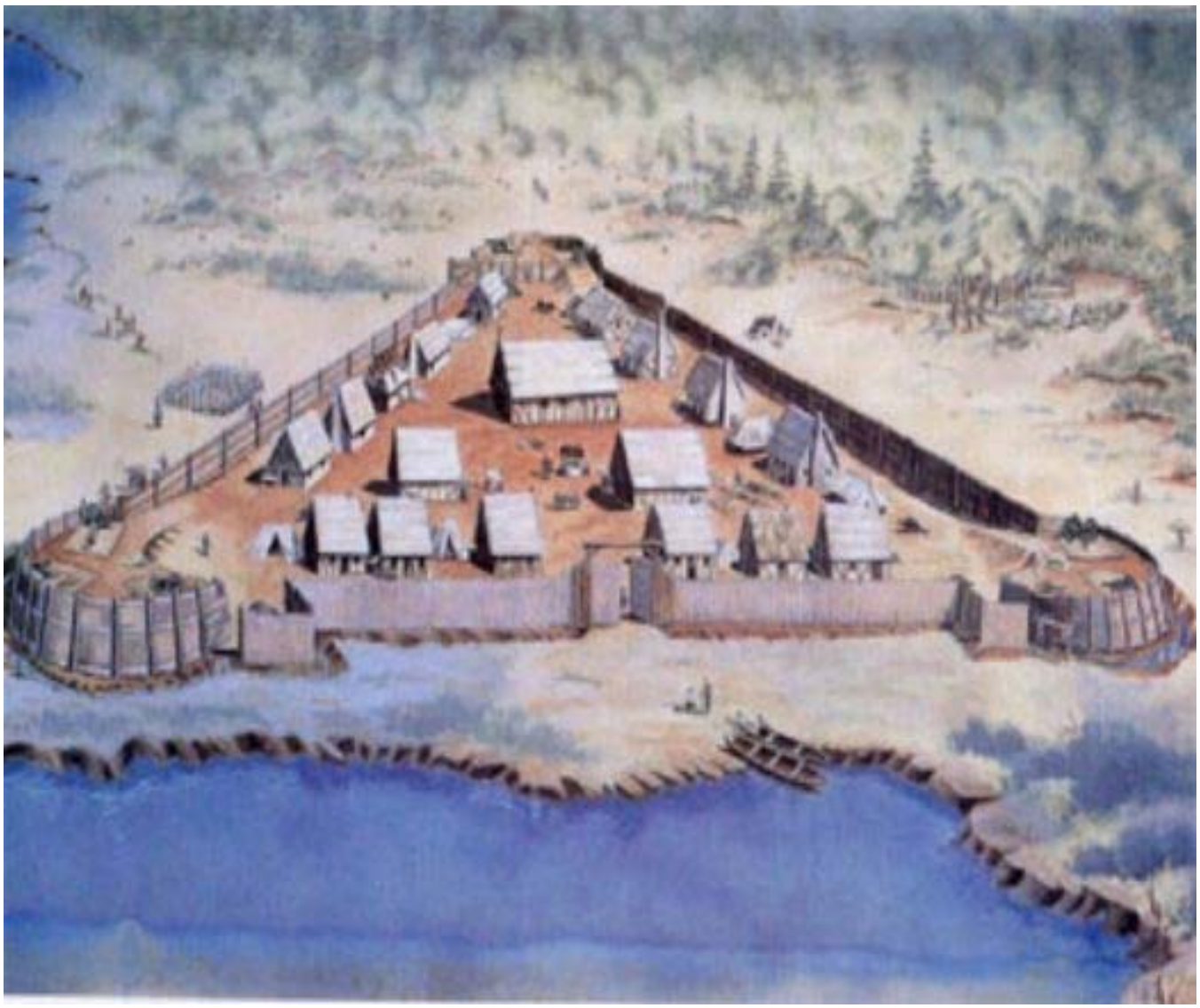
entrance to the Chesapeake Bay. Both the river and the settlement were named for King James I who granted a Charter to the Virginia Company to undertake this enterprise on behalf of the crown. At that time, "Virginia" was the English name for the entire East Coast of North America north of Florida. The charter gave the company the right to settle anywhere from roughly present-day North Carolina to New York state. The company's plan was to reward investors by locating gold and silver deposits and by finding a river route to the Pacific Ocean for trade with the Orient.

The location at Jamestown Island was selected primarily because it offered a favorable strategic defensive position against other European forces (Spain was the primary concern) which might approach by water. But this focus on defending against old European rivals almost led to the demise of the settlement, for they soon recognized that the swampy and isolated site was plagued by mosquitoes, brackish tidal water unsuitable for drinking, extremely hot temperatures in the summer months, limited opportunities for hunting, little suitable farm land, and numerous Native Americans who were not all that excited about foreign invaders on their lands. Almost immediately after landing, the colonists were under attack from what amounted to the on-again off-again enemy, the Algonquian natives, and they quickly built a wooden fort to provide some protection.

During the next two years, disease, famine and continuing attacks of neighboring Algonquians took a tremendous toll on the population, but there were times when the Powhatan Indian trade revived the colony with food, in exchange for copper and iron implements. In 1608 two supply missions arrived from England, bringing 140 additional colonists. During the winter of 1609-1610 many of the colonists died of starvation and disease, and only 60 of the 214 settlers at Jamestown survived. When Stephen Hopkins and his fellow survivors of the *Sea Venture* arrived at Jamestown the following spring, in May of 1610, they found the colony in ruins and practically abandoned. It was decided to abandon the colony and everyone was placed aboard the ships to return to England.

During the same period that the *Sea Venture* suffered its misfortune and its survivors were struggling in Bermuda to continue on to Virginia, back in England, the publication of Captain John Smith's books of his adventures in Virginia sparked a resurgence in interest in the colony. This helped lead to the dispatch in early 1610 of additional colonists, a doctor, supplies, and a new governor, Thomas West, Baron De La Warr. Lord De La Warr and his party arrived on the James River shortly after the colonists had abandoned Jamestown. Intercepting them about 10 miles downstream from Jamestown, the new governor forced the remaining settlers to return to Jamestown (which must have been a terrible disappointment for the Native Americans).

Even with the supplies and new leadership, the colonists were still facing hostile Native Americans, uncertain food supplies, and extremely unpleasant living conditions in this swampland. Although there are no records of Hopkins' role in the life of the settlement, it is likely that he assisted the colonists as an experienced tanner or leathermaker as well as participating in defending the fort against attack,



and hunting for game (based on subsequent records regarding his capabilities). He apparently gained considerable experience in dealings with the native population.

Stephen Hopkins returned to London, sometime between mid-1613, and 1617. There are no records of exactly when he left Jamestown, but records in London show that his wife Mary died in May 1613, and that Stephen had not yet returned from Virginia. Records regarding her estate listed her as a widow; she or the authorities apparently assumed that Stephen had perished in Virginia. Authorities provided for the care of her children, Elizabeth, Constance, and Giles. Records also show that Stephen Hopkins married Elizabeth Fisher on Feb 19, 1617, in London, and that he had resumed responsibility for his three children from his previous marriage.

Stephen Hopkins may have still been at Jamestown in 1614 when John Rolfe married Pocahontas, daughter of the Algonquian chief Powhatan. John Rolfe was on the *Sea Venture* with Hopkins, and arrived at Jamestown with Hopkins in 1610. His marriage to Pocahontas resulted in a number of years of peaceful relations with the Algonquians, during which the colony grew and health conditions improved. Settlements expanded into plantations in the area, and tobacco had become a major source of income for the colonists (replacing the expected gold and silver). Unfortunately for the colonists, the Algonquians eventually became disenchanted and in 1622 they attacked the out plantations, killing over 300 of the settlers, or almost one-third of the Virginia colonists at that time.

Slow Pace of English Settlement in the Americas

Jamestown was the first permanent British settlement in North America. They had previously attempted a settlement farther south, called the Roanoke Colony, in 1585, but all residents of that colony disappeared by 1587, without evidence of what happened to them. There was no further major settlement attempt until 20 years later, with the Jamestown settlement.

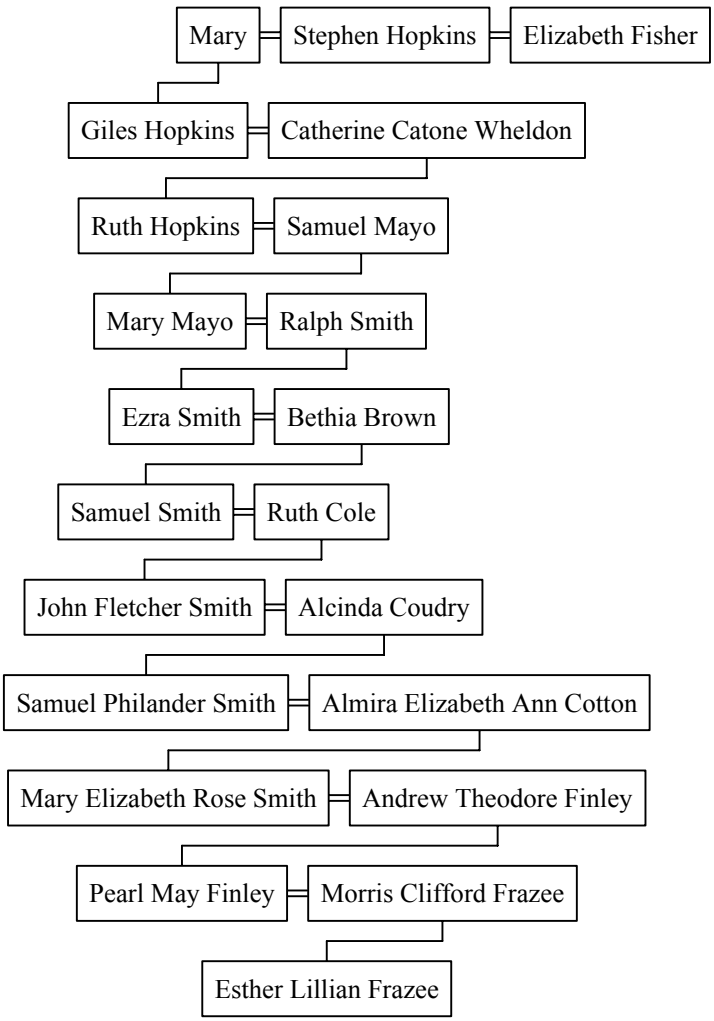
Meanwhile, the Spanish and Portuguese had permanent settlements established all over Central and South America by the mid-1500s. The first permanent Spanish settlement in the Caribbean began when about 2,500 Spanish colonists were settled in eastern Hispaniola in 1502, over 100 years before Jamestown. From this base in Santo Domingo, as the new colony was called, the Spanish quickly fanned out throughout the Caribbean and onto the mainland. Jamaica was settled in 1509 and Trinidad the following year. The Spanish established a permanent settlement in Colombia in 1510. Buenos Aires, Argentina was founded in 1536. Asuncion, Paraquay was founded in 1537; La Paz, Bolivia in 1548; Caracus, Venezuela in 1567. Spain established a permanent settlement at St. Augustine on the east coast of Florida in 1565.

By the 1530s, the Portuguese had settlements in what is now called Brazil, and by the 1560s they had established large sugar cane plantations in Brazil, and had imported thousands of slaves from Africa to work the plantations. The city of Rio de Janeiro was founded in 1565.

There were some major differences in the approach to exploration and colonization between the Spanish and Portuguese on one hand, and the British. The Spanish and Portuguese came to the Americas with trained military men, and military equipment, including horses trained for battle. The British settlers came with few military men in most cases, and with minimal weapons and no horses. The British still had a technological advantage over the Native Americans in weaponry, because the natives did not have guns of any kind, but the Spanish and Portuguese had a much greater advantage, since horses gave them mobility, speed and the ability to move canon as well as other supplies.

The Spanish and Portuguese settlers also brought with them the power and resources of the Catholic church, including dedicated missionaries who established missions and went to work to convert the native population to Christianity. The British settlements were not supported by the Church of England, and many of the British colonists came to America to get away from religious persecution in Britain.

Direct Descendants of Stephen Hopkins to Esther Frazee



Chapter 3: The Mayflower

William Brewster (ancestor of Mary Smith) was the Postmaster in the town of Scrooby, in northern Nottinghamshire, England. Born in 1566, he was educated at Cambridge, and as a young man served as an assistant to Queen Elizabeth's secretary of state, William Davison. In this role he gained important experience with diplomacy as practiced by the royal families of Europe, as well as a knowledge of the world that few possessed. His diplomatic career was cut short when the Queen used Davison as a scapegoat for the execution of Mary Queen of Scots. So William Brewster was forced to return to Scrooby where he took over his father's position as postmaster.

Back in Scrooby, William Brewster became active in a Puritan religious congregation that called themselves Separatists. The Puritans believed that the Church of England had strayed from the true teachings of Christianity by establishing all sorts of rules and ceremonies that were not found in the Bible and had nothing to do with the teachings of Christ. They believed that they should base their religion on the writings in the New Testament, without the trappings and hierarchy of the church. They rejected the need to take direction from Bishops or priests; they could read and interpret the Bible themselves. The only legitimate church organization was the congregation, which organized itself and selected its own leader or pastor.

The Puritans thought that they could reform the Church of England, and should remain part of the Church. The group of Puritans in Scrooby called themselves Separatists because they believed the Church of England was not a true church of Christ and they needed to separate themselves from that church and form their own congregation. But they must carry on their religious practices in secret because such worship outside the Church of England was illegal. During the 1500s several Separatist leaders had been jailed or executed for their crimes, and with the coronation of King James I in 1603, the king increased efforts to force the Separatists to conform. So the meetings in Brewster's house in Scrooby became more dangerous, and by 1607 it was apparent that the authorities were aware of their activities, and some members of the congregation were jailed. In September, 1607, Brewster was removed from his position as Postmaster because of his role in supporting the Separatists. With many of the congregation being harassed by the authorities, they decided they had no choice but to flee the country.

They knew that other Separatists had fled to Holland, where they were able to practice their religion without restriction. Holland supported the concept of separation of church and state, and religious groups were able to worship as they wished. But the British government would not grant Separatists permission to leave Britain; they would need to sneak out of the country. Their escape to Holland was not easy; they hired a ship captain to take them across the North Sea, but the captain turned them over to authorities and several of their leaders spent months in jail before they were able to try again. After further misadventures, most of the

congregation eventually made it to Holland, where they initially settled in Amsterdam, and later moved a few miles south to the town of Leiden.

The congregation members found employment and housing in Leiden, and established a regular meeting place. Life was hard because the only jobs available for them were low-paying labor-intensive jobs in cloth-making and related industries, and many had to work 12 to 16 hours a day, six days a week to support themselves and their families. After a few years they also realized that their children were growing up to be Dutch, not English, and they were determined to maintain their English heritage. With no hopes of going back to England, they began considering crossing the Atlantic to establish their own colony in America. Some other Separatists in Holland were planning the same thing, and by 1619 William Brewster and other members of his congregation began planning the journey to America.

They first needed to obtain a patent from the Virginia Company (the same company that was financing the Jamestown settlement) to permit them to establish a settlement in the Hudson valley area. Britain was interested in promoting settlement in the Hudson valley because they knew that Holland also was promoting settlements in that area, and they wanted to lay claim to the area first, and the patent was granted. (Representatives from Holland offered a patent to the congregation for settlement in a Dutch colony in the Hudson River area, but the congregation rejected it; they wanted an English community.)

Next they needed to find financing, ships and supplies for the journey. Representatives of the congregation were sent to Britain to negotiate an arrangement with a group of investors who called themselves Adventurers, who would help finance the journey and the initial settlement and in exchange the Separatists would generate profits in the new colony through fur trading and codfishing to make it a profitable investment for the Adventurers. William Brewster would have been leading this effort, but the British authorities had recently issued orders for his arrest because he had printed a pamphlet that was critical of King James and the Church of England, and Brewster had gone into hiding.

While these negotiations were proceeding, the Separatists were able to purchase a small ship in Holland, named the Speedwell. Although it was only 50 feet in length, it was deemed capable of an Atlantic crossing, and it would permit more of the congregation to make the journey. The Separatists had decided that only about 125 of the congregation, about one-third of the total, would make the initial voyage and the rest would come over later once the colony was established. It was decided that their Pastor, John Robinson, would stay in Leiden with those left behind, and that William Brewster would be the religious leader of the Separatists going to America.

After many difficulties and near collapse of their efforts in Britain to negotiate a deal to finance the journey, they finally had an arrangement in which the Adventurers would provide a ship, with supplies for the journey. Part of the deal was that the ship would carry some adventurers other than the Separatists, to help establish the new colony in America. These non-separatists would be referred to as “Strangers” by the congregation.

The Adventurers' agent found an old but reliable merchant ship, named the Mayflower, in London, and most of the Strangers boarded the ship there. The ship would be finally readied in Southampton. The Separatists would make their way to Southampton from Holland on board the Speedwell, where the majority would move to the Mayflower and the remainder planned to travel on the Speedwell.

When the two ships reached Southampton, the Separatists and Strangers met, and William Brewster was able to evade the authorities and board the Mayflower. Also aboard the Mayflower were Brewster's wife **Mary**, and two of their sons, Love Brewster and Wrestling Brewster. They had left their daughter **Patience** behind in Leiden. She was about 20 years old, and was planning to join them on a later voyage.

Among the "Strangers" aboard the Mayflower was **Stephen Hopkins**, who was now about 38 years old, and an experienced ocean traveler as a result of his trips to and from Jamestown. He had with him his second wife, Elizabeth, two children from his first marriage, one child from his second marriage, and two servants. His wife was rather large with pregnancy. His children included his son **Giles**, who was 13 years old.

Why was Stephen Hopkins on board the Mayflower with his wife and children? It is known that Hopkins had been living just outside the wall of London, in a neighborhood where some other Mayflower passengers lived, including William Bradford, the future Governor of the Plymouth colony, and Robert Cushman, the London agent for the Separatists who led the negotiations with the investors. Hopkins probably was known to these Separatists, and it is likely that both the Separatists and the investors liked the idea of having someone on the journey who had been to America and had experience dealing with the natives. It is speculated that Hopkins insisted on taking his family with him this time, having lost his first wife while he was off in Jamestown.

The passengers assigned to the Speedwell included **Thomas Blossom** (ancestor of Moses R. Frazee) and his son, name unknown. His wife, **Anna Helsdon Blossom,** stayed behind in Leiden, probably because she was several months pregnant at the time. The Blossoms were originally from Cambridge, England, and had fled to Leiden to join Brewster's Separatists. Thomas was a leader of the congregation in Leiden, and was later referred to as a Deacon. He was about 40 years old as they prepared to leave for America.

It was now early August, and they were behind schedule in leaving England to make it to America before cold weather set in. And fortune was not with them; two days out of Southampton the Speedwell began to leak badly and both ships put into Dartmouth, about 75 miles west of Southampton, for repairs of Speedwell. Repairs were made quickly but then the wind did not cooperate and they waited at Dartmouth for several days for a wind. They had been underway again only a few more days when Speedwell again sprung a leak, and they were forced to put in at Plymouth, about 50 miles west of Dartmouth, where they decided to give up on the Speedwell. They moved as many passengers and supplies from Speedwell to the Mayflower as would fit, and on September 6 the Mayflower finally set off for America. The

passengers had already been cooped up on the ships for nearly a month and now faced a long journey in worsening fall weather. (And these problems with the Speedwell resulted in the new American colony being named "Plymouth" rather than "Dartmouth" or "Southampton").

Thomas Blossom and his son were among those on the Speedwell who had to return to Leiden and wait for a future voyage. Missing the journey probably was not a great disappointment for Thomas Blossom, because his daughter **Elizabeth** was born a few months later in Leiden. Thomas probably was relieved that he had a good excuse to abandon the trip and go back to his wife and the relative comfort and safety of Leiden and wait to try another time.

It is interesting to note here that this ancestor of Moses R. Frazee would meet up with the Brewsters and the Hopkins, the ancestors of Mary Smith, in the Plymouth Colony a few years later, and the Blossom and Brewster and Hopkins descendants would meet up again in McKenzie County, North Dakota nearly 300 years later, when Morris Clifford Frazee met Pearl Finley.

With the loss of the Speedwell, the number of Separatists on the journey had been reduced to only about 50, out of the total of 102 passengers and about 30 crew members on the Mayflower. But now they were all in the same boat; they were all Pilgrims, facing two months of rough seas in an over-crowded boat, with depleted supplies of food and water, heading for the mouth of the Hudson River. Not many personal details have been recorded about the passage, but it is known that Stephan Hopkins' wife Elizabeth gave birth to a son during the voyage, and the son was appropriately named Oceanus.

As the weeks wore on, the ship was battling against strong westerly winds and the gulf stream. The captain knew that the Mayflower was off course and would approach land far north of the Hudson River. They were running out of food, water and, most importantly, beer, and many passengers and crew were ill. The captain decided to head for the nearest land, which was Cape Cod. He then initially tried to sail south to the Hudson River, but it was claimed that he ran into treacherous waters and unfavorable winds, and decided to find safe harbor on Cape Cod.

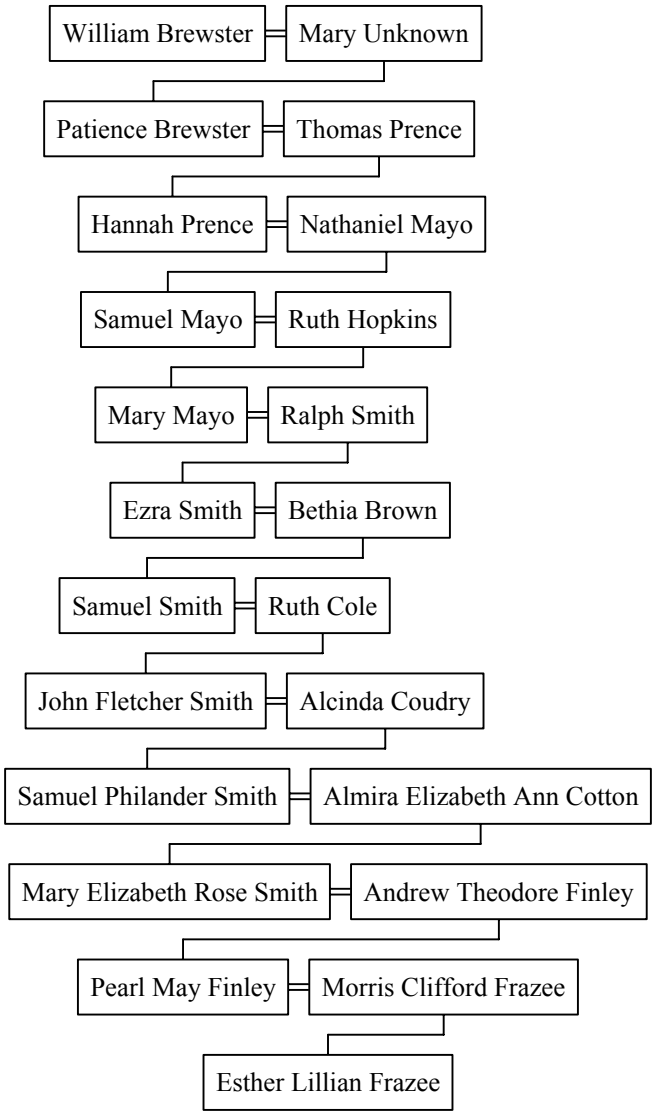
As land was in sight, some of the men on board began announcing that they had no intention of remaining under the authority of an English governor or English law when they reached land; they considered themselves free to go their own way and do their own thing since they were outside the bounds of English law. Some historians have speculated that Stephen Hopkins may have been a leader in expressing his disdain for English authority, in view of his prior behavior in Bermuda. It is likely that some of the Strangers were not interested in being ruled by the Separatists, who they considered to be religious fanatics. And the Separatists did not wish to be ruled by someone appointed by the investors (and the investors had their representatives on board). In an historic effort to keep the Pilgrims together, the adult male passengers finally proposed and agreed that they would elect their own leaders from among their members, with every adult male passenger, including the indentured servants, having an equal vote. They agreed to establish their own laws, rules and governmental structure. A short document was prepared, now called the Mayflower

Compact, and it was signed by all the adult male passengers, including William Brewster and Stephen Hopkins. They then elected John Carver, one of the Separatists, as their first Governor.

This Compact, which was to be the official Constitution of Plymouth Colony for over 70 years, is the first statement of the principles of democracy as we now know and understand them. For the first time in America, a group of men, of their own free will, agreed to be governed by themselves according to the will of the majority. (Unfortunately, women were not allowed to participate.)

On November 11, 1620, the ship dropped anchor inside the upraised arm of the Cape, in what is now called Provincetown Harbor. They had survived the crossing, with little loss of life. They were all aware that another group of Separatists had attempted a crossing the previous year, and 130 of the 180 aboard the ship had died from disease in the attempted crossing.

Direct Descendants of William Brewster to Esther Frazee



Chapter 4: Plymouth Colony Beginnings

The First Winter

Having arrived at Provincetown Harbor on a Saturday evening, they were not able to begin exploring the land until Monday, because they insisted on observing the Sabbath. On Monday they went ashore, for the first time in over two months. They found a freshwater pond where they were able to wash clothes and themselves decently for the first time in weeks. They also found and devoured a large number of blue mussels, causing some to become ill from shellfish poisoning.

A first task was to assemble a small boat, or shallop, with sail, that could be used to explore the area more easily by water. The boat had been disassembled for the crossing, and now needed to be reassembled and repaired. Meanwhile they began to cautiously explore the wilderness on foot, on the lookout for natives. By Wednesday they had not encountered any, so Governor Carver authorized a group of 16 men to set out on foot to search for a suitable place for a settlement or maybe make contact with the natives. The group was headed by Miles Standish, who was the designated military leader of the Pilgrims, accompanied closely by **Stephen Hopkins** who was the only one with prior experience in America. Each man was armed with a musket and sword.

Although they reportedly had a map of the area that had been prepared by Captain John Smith while on a voyage to the area in 1614, they apparently ignored the map which showed a large river across the bay and less than a days sail to the north, at what is now Boston. The banks of such a deep river would have made an ideal place for a settlement, but instead they set off on foot, marching south in the soft sand of the bay. About a mile down the shore they spotted a small group of natives, who immediately ran away. The Pilgrims, out of shape from two months sitting in a ship, had no chance to keep up with the natives. They marched along the shore for two days, finding some evidence of natives, and stumbled across a couple of large baskets of corn that had been buried in the sand by the natives. Knowing their dire food situation, they helped themselves to a large pot full and began the journey back to the ship. On the way, **Stephen Hopkins** showed them a deer trap set by the natives, consisting of a strong sapling bent over, tied to a noose strung around a pile of acorns.

Reassembling the shallop was taking longer than expected and it wasn't until November 27 that they had it ready, and a group set out to explore the bay in the shallop. In two successive explorations, running through December 12, they explored much of the shore of the bay, in this open boat, in weather that was well below freezing. They spent each night on shore in hastily made camps where they could build a large fire to keep from freezing to death, but several of the men became ill from the severe cold. After one such night onshore they were attacked by about 30 natives who sprayed the camp with arrows, but none of the Pilgrims was hit. Making further progress along the shore they still had found no suitable spot for a settlement, and at one point they were caught out in the bay on the open shallop in a gale wind and freezing spray, and barely missed capsizing and drowning the entire lot.

Finally they came upon the spot that they called Plymouth Bay, about 25 miles across Cape Cod Bay from their ship, and they decided this was the place they would make their settlement. Notes made by William Bradford and other Pilgrims never mentioned stepping onto a rock as they went ashore to check out the land! But they did find some cleared fields, fresh water, a sheltered bay, and best of all, no signs of recent native settlements. On December 20 they finally had selected the site for their settlement, and the Mayflower had sailed across the Bay and anchored offshore. And it was now the dead of winter in New England.

Meanwhile the Mayflower had become an infirmary, with many of the men, women and children suffering from colds, flu, fever, and scurvy. One of the Pilgrim men died even before the ship made it to anchor in Plymouth Bay.

After onloading some provisions and tools the men began felling trees to start building shelters. On December 25 they erected the frame for the first house, which was a large "common house". It served as shelter for those working onshore while other houses were being built. The Pilgrims were not building log houses. They were building houses based on common styles in England, where there was no experience with log houses. They used a "post and beam" method, placing vertical posts tied together with horizontal beams, and then covering this frame with thick boards. The roofs would have been thatch, using bundles of reeds and straw. This method required fewer trees than a log house, but required substantially more labor than needed to build a log house.

In the following days and weeks so many of the Pilgrims and ship's crew fell ill that the common house was full of those too weak to care for themselves, and there were barely enough healthy left to care for the sick. Most of the Pilgrims were still living aboard the Mayflower due to the lack of shelter on land, and the close conditions on the ship probably contributed to the spread of the flu. During the months of February and March, two or three people were dying some days. Those not sick were working hard to find food, build more shelter, tend for the sick, and prepare to fight off any attacks from natives. William Bradford (who later became Governor) commended **William Brewster** for his dedication and strength through these trying weeks. By spring, 52 of the 102 Pilgrims were dead, as well as 18 of the 30 ship's crew. Several families were entirely wiped out, and several children were left orphans when both parents died. Priscilla Mullins, 18 years old, was the only member of her family to survive; she lost her father, mother and brother. Several of the Pilgrim men became widowers, including Bradford, Standish, Eaton and Allerton.

But there were almost miraculous exceptions to the death toll among the families. The **Brewster family** and the **Hopkins family**, Esther's ancestors, suffered no losses. All four Brewsters survived the winter, as did all six of the Hopkins family, including baby Oceanus. Only two other families survived that first winter completely untouched by death. The Brewsters and Hopkins must have had good genes!

On the other hand, it may be equally likely that they survived because they had a weaker immune system than many of the others. Recent studies of flu epidemics, particularly the 1918 pandemic, have concluded that the flu was most deadly to those

with the strongest immune system. The body's immune system caused a hyper production of mucus to fight off the virus, resulting in the victim essentially drowning in their own liquids. Those with less effective immune systems were less likely to have this fatal reaction. It may be that the same situation occurred with the Mayflower passengers. The first person to die on the Mayflower was one of the strongest young sailors, who died within a few days after becoming ill, which is typical of a virulent flu. Many of those who died that winter were in the prime of life, which was true of the 1918 pandemic. So our ancestors may well have survived because their immune systems were somewhat weaker than others! We will never know.

Treaty With the Natives

Throughout the winter the Pilgrims lived in fear of an attack by the natives. They knew they were invading the Native Americans' land. They sighted natives watching them on several occasions, and Miles Standish had developed plans to defend the settlement, including some training of the few men who were still alive and healthy. As the men died, the fear of attack increased, and they did their best to hide any sign of the numbers dying, so as not to show their weakness to the potential enemy. Then one day in the latter part of March, a lone native came walking into the settlement, wearing nothing but a fringed strap of leather around his waist. He was a minor chief, or sachem, named Samoset, who had been sent by the primary chief of the native tribe that controlled the area in which the Pilgrims had settled. He spoke some English that he had learned from English fishermen along the shores of what is now Maine, and he explained that most of the natives who had lived nearby had died in a plague (probably smallpox). He also said the chief, called Massasoit, was interested in talks with the Pilgrims.

As evening approached, Samoset expressed interest in spending the night with the Pilgrims, who did not have a place for him to sleep, and were not sure they could trust him. After failing to encourage him to leave, **Stephen Hopkins** finally offered to let him stay with him and his family overnight. Samoset left the next day, and returned a few days later with the big chief Massasoit and some of his men, including another native who spoke English quite fluently as a result of having been captured by some Europeans years before; he had lived in London for some time before returning to America! **William Brewster**, drawing on his diplomatic experience, helped Governor Carver select several gifts to present to the chief before they sat down to discuss the Pilgrim's desire for peace and trade. The chief and the Governor reached agreement between the Pakanoket and the Pilgrims in which they promised not to harm the other, to punish anyone who did any harm, and to come to the aid of the other if they were attacked by a third party.

The Pakanoket were not happy about the European invaders on their soil, but the tribe's numbers had been decimated by disease in the prior couple of years (the disease probably was smallpox brought from Europe by sailors) and they now were in fear of attack from stronger neighboring tribes. An alliance with the Pilgrims was deemed to be preferable to being wiped out by another tribe. The Pilgrims had lucked out in their unplanned selection of Plymouth Bay for a settlement.

In studying the early colonists in America, it appears that many of the settlers were still focused on their old European enemies; the early English settlers were particularly concerned about potential attack by the French or the Spanish. The Native Americans seemed to suffer from the same problem of focusing on past enemies rather than the new ones. They were more focused on continuing their historical feuds with other native tribes than on confronting the Europeans who were taking their land. This was of great benefit to the Europeans but disastrous for the natives.

There to Stay

In April, the Mayflower, with its decimated crew, headed back to England, leaving the Pilgrims with no escape. One of the crew members, John Alden, decided to stay in the colony with the Pilgrims. His name became known to school children throughout America over two centuries later as a result of Henry Wadsworth Longfellow's poem titled "The Courtship of Miles Standish" in which Standish supposedly asks John Alden to tell Priscilla Mullens that Standish was interested in marrying her. According to Longfellow, Priscilla responded: "Why don't you speak for yourself, John". The poem is fiction, but these three characters were based on real people who were now committed to making their lives in America. And Priscilla did marry John, and was probably very fortunate to have rejected Miles. However, John probably was no great catch; he was later noted for leading the persecution of Quakers and Baptists in the colony.

A few weeks after the Mayflower departed, Governor Carver suddenly took ill and died, leaving the colony even more vulnerable. But they quickly elected William Bradford to succeed him, in accordance with the terms of their Compact. With warm weather they were able to plant crops, and the natives showed them how to plant corn, fertilized with fish from the Bay and streams. And they completed seven houses and four common buildings in their little village. Bradford also sent **Stephen Hopkins** and Edward Winslow on a mission to visit chief Massasoit; they had to walk some forty miles to the chief's camp, bearing gifts. As they made this trek, with a native guide, they passed many sites where the guide explained the historical significance of the place. They began to appreciate the fact that the natives had been here for centuries. Their visit with Massasoit was successful in ensuring peace with the Pokanokets for at least a few years.

That fall, probably in September or early October, they completed their harvest of corn, squash, beans, peas and some other crops. The Harbor was full of migrating ducks and geese, and they were able to quickly kill enough to last everyone for several days. For the first time, the colony felt a little bit secure, with food, shelter, peace with the natives, and no epidemics. So the Governor ordered a celebration and invited chief Massasoit and his buddies to join them. The chief showed up with over 100 buddies, along with several deer, wild turkeys and other goodies. This celebration, of course, has been hyped as the first Thanksgiving, even though there was no Thanksgiving holiday in America until over 200 years later when President Lincoln proclaimed a national holiday of Thanksgiving. And Virginia claims that the

first Thanksgiving celebration in America took place in 1619 near Jamestown, two years before the Plymouth Colony celebration.

Shortly after that day of celebration, the Pilgrims were surprised when a ship arrived in Plymouth Harbor from England. The unexpected new arrival, the ship *Fortune*, had been sent by the Adventurers, and carried 37 passengers, including a few Separatists from Leiden and several Strangers, mainly young men.

Among the newly arrived Separatists was **Thomas Prence**, ancestor of Mary Smith, 21 years old, son of a carriage maker from England, who would eventually succeed William Bradford as Governor of the Colony.

The arrival of the *Fortune* was fortunate in that it more than doubled the number of able-bodied men in the colony, but unfortunately the ship did not bring a supply of food, and the colony was now faced with the question of how to feed everyone through another winter. But they loaded the *Fortune* with beaver skins and split oak to be used for barrel staves, and it set off for London with enough goods to pay off some of the Separatists' debt to the Adventurers. It was not until the next summer that the Pilgrims learned that the *Fortune* had been captured by the French, and their goods never made it back to the Adventurers in London.

The Pilgrims managed to muddle through the winter of 1621-22, with help from the natives who were willing to provide them with corn and beans. The area around Plymouth had the potential to supply thousands of people with adequate food, and it had been supporting thousands of natives before the plague reduced their numbers. But the Pilgrims were not experienced in living off the land. They apparently were not able to utilize much of what was available. They had access to the rivers and bays teeming with fish, but were not able to catch enough to live on, and apparently did not know how to store them for future use. They had access to thousands of migrating ducks and geese, but were not able to keep them for later use. There were deer, turkeys and other wildlife in the surrounding forests, but the Pilgrims had difficulty killing them when needed. They had not brought any cattle of their own as a source of meat or milk, and had only a small number of chickens. So they made it through the winter by rationing food and scrounging for ground nuts and trading for corn and beans.

The difficulties the English faced in surviving in the area was demonstrated in 1622-23, when one of the Adventurers tried to set up another settlement some 40 miles north of Plymouth, just southeast of present day Boston. The group of young men failed to bring food supplies with them, and were unwilling or unable to find enough food on their own. Even with help and advice from the Pilgrims, many of them starved to death, and were forced to abandon their settlement after less than a year.

Although the Pilgrims had negotiated a peace treaty with Massasoit, there were other natives in the region who continued to be a threat to the colony, and Miles Standish exacerbated the danger by developing a reputation of being a nasty brute in his dealings with the natives, by brutally killing two native chiefs after inviting them to a supposed friendly meeting. The Pilgrims built a wall of impaled logs all around their village, and were still not feeling safe, so they built a strong fort to which they could retreat in the event of attack. The Pilgrims were spending a very large portion of their time and resources to protect themselves against a potential threat, but made almost no effort to reduce the threat by minimizing the adverse impact they were having on the natives. There have been volumes written about the deficiencies in the English relations with the natives, but the Pilgrims managed to live basically unmolested by the original population of the area until the outbreak of what was called King Philip's war in 1675.

By 1623 the food situation in the colony had improved; they had been provided some pigs, goats and a few head of cattle on recent ships, and they had increased the output of crops from their gardens.

The colony also grew again in the summer of 1623, when two more ships, the *Anne* and the *Little James*, arrived carrying about 90 new settlers, including some more Separatists from Leiden. Among them were Patience and Fear Brewster, daughters of William and Mary Brewster. **Patience Brewster,** ancestor of Mary Smith, was 24 years old. The addition of these newcomers brought the total population of the settlement to about 180.

The following year, 1624, **Patience Brewster** and **Thomas Prence** were married. They had both spent much of their youth in Leiden, Holland, and were both strong supporters of the Separatist movement. They had four children together, Thomas, Rebecca, Mercy and **Hannah**. Hannah was born in 1629. **Hannah Prence** was the first of our ancestors to be born in America.

With the birth of Hannah Prence there were seven of Mary Smith's ancestors living in Plymouth Colony: Stephen Hopkins and his son Giles; William Brewster and his wife Mary; Patience Brewster and her husband Thomas Prence, and their daughter Hannah Prence.

Chapter 5: The Great Migration

By the late 1620s, some of the Plymouth residents were beginning to leave the settlement. Some left because they believed there were better locations for settlements elsewhere in the area, and moved to other settlements along the coast of what is now Massachusetts. Some left because of opposition to the religious rules imposed on the colony by the Separatists, and they went to Dutch settlements in the Hudson River area, or to Jamestown, or to new settlements in what is now Connecticut. And some just gave up and returned to England.

But there was a growing number of new settlers coming to the New England coast, primarily from England, and several new settlements were founded in the Massachusetts Bay Colony, in and near what is now Boston. This increase in immigration was caused in part by activities in England, where King Charles I had dissolved parliament in 1629 and attempted to rule as absolute monarch, spurring many to leave for the American colonies. In March, 1630, John Winthrop lead a Puritan migration of nine ships with 900 colonists to Massachusetts Bay, where he became the first governor. In September, Boston was officially established and served as the site of Winthrop's government. The Puritans of Massachusetts Bay colony were not affiliated with the Separatists of Plymouth Colony, and they attempted to maintain the fiction that they had not separated from the Church of England. Meanwhile there continued to be more arrivals at Plymouth from the Separatists in Leiden.

In England, King Charles and Archbishop Laud were making life increasingly miserable for any nonconformists, and many looked to America as an escape. In the decade from 1634 to 1644, an estimated 21 thousand Puritan immigrants poured into New England. Most went to settlements to the north, south and west of Plymouth, and Plymouth quickly became a very small part of colonial New England. There also were large numbers of immigrants into other colonial areas, particularly the Dutch colony of New Netherland, which is discussed in the next Chapters.

Several of our ancestors came to New England during this Great Migration. Most of them settled in towns or townships in Plymouth Colony, but not in the town of Plymouth itself. Several of these new ancestors married descendants of the early Plymouth settlers, and some came to Plymouth Colony but moved on west within one or two generations. The term “town” as used to refer to these settlements may be misleading, because they included extensive farm land that was worked by the residents. To provide security from potential attack from the natives, a relatively small number of houses in a town would be surrounded by farm land belonging to the individuals living in the town. They would work their fields during the day but lived in the village. Since the majority of the residents of these towns were farmers, the potential size of the population was limited by the amount of available farm land within easy reach of the town.

During the period from 1630 to 1650 several more ancestors of Mary Smith arrived from England and settled in Plymouth Colony or the Massachusetts Bay Colony.

There also were several ancestors of Moses Frazee who arrived from England in these colonies during this time.

Smith Ancestors

In addition to the Hopkins, Brewster and Prence families, Mary Smith was descended from several more families in Plymouth Colony who were the ancestors of Ezra Smith, Mary's great, great grandfather.

In 1633, 23 year old **Ralph Smith** came to Plymouth Colony on a ship from England with 95 passengers. (The name was initially spelled Smythe or Smyth in early records.) Also on the ship were **Edmond Hobart**, his wife **Margaret Dewey Hobart**, and several children, including their daughter **Elizabeth** (also called Rebecca). Ralph Smith and the Hobarts all came from Hingham, England. Elizabeth was 21 years old at the time. Ralph Smith and the Hobarts and others who came from Hingham, England settled in a place then named Bear Cove, about 12 miles south of Boston. They changed the name to Hingham after their home town in England. Margaret Dewey Hobart died in Hingham soon thereafter. Edmond Hobart was made a freeman in 1634, and was named a constable the same year. He died in Hingham in 1646, at the age of 76.

Ralph Smith and **Elizabeth Hobart** were married in 1639 in Plymouth Colony, and they lived in Hingham until about 1650 when they moved to the new town of Eastham, situated on the lower arm of Cape Cod, slightly north of the elbow. They produced several children, including **Thomas Smith** who was born in Eastham in about 1650. Ralph served as constable in Eastham, and became one of the largest land owners in the town.

In 1633-34, a smallpox and influenza epidemic ravaged both the colonial and native populations of New England. Among the dead was **Patience Brewster Prence**, wife of Thomas Prence. She was only 35 years old. Her sister Fear also perished. Patience left behind her daughter **Hannah** who was only about five years old.

Thomas Prence was now responsible for caring for his young children, as well as carrying out his duties in the Colony. He filled in for Governor Bradford as Governor of Plymouth Colony in 1634, and again in 1638, and then served as Governor from 1657 to 1673. He built a reputation for intolerance of anyone who opposed the religious teachings of the Separatists, and apparently held a special hatred for the Quakers. On the other hand, he believed in better education for his community and worked hard to raise more money for schools in the Colony.

The **Hopkins family** seems to have escaped this smallpox epidemic unscathed once again. Stephen Hopkins continued to live in Plymouth and served as Assistant Governor for several years. The former rabble-rouser apparently had become part of the establishment in the colony. He died in Plymouth in 1644 at the age of 62. His children were quite prolific and produced thousands of offspring over the next five generations.

Plymouth court records show that **Stephen Hopkins** was the first colonist to build a house, in 1638, in the area that became Yarmouth, in Plymouth Colony. He was given permission to build a house that he used when working hay fields in the area, provided that he not withdraw from the town of Plymouth. A few months later, permission was given to Gabriel Wheldon to locate there, and the permanent authorized settlement of Yarmouth began in early 1639.

Gabriel Whelden, who was born in about 1595 in England, came to the Plymouth Colony and settled in Yarmouth in 1639. He came to the Colony from England with his four children, including **Catherine** who was about 20 years old in 1639. His wife, **Margaret Weeks**, who was the mother of his children, had died in England in 1621. Some records indicate that Gabriel married a Native American woman some time after settling in Yarmouth, but she was not the mother of his children. I have not found any other records of our New England ancestors marrying Native American women. Gabriel moved from Yarmouth in about 1648 and settled in Malden, Massachusetts where he died in about 1654.

Also in 1639, **Giles Hopkins**, son of Stephen Hopkins, moved to Yarmouth. It appears that **Giles Hopkins** and **Catherine Wheldon** soon became an "item," and they were married on October 9, 1639, in Plymouth. They proceeded to have ten children, including **Ruth Hopkins**, ancestor of Mary Smith.

Another ancestor of Mary Smith who lived nearby was **John Mayo, Sr**. who came to Plymouth Colony from England or Leiden, Holland with his wife and children in 1638. He had been with the Separatists in Leiden prior to 1620, and married **Tamisen Brike** in Leiden in 1618. He was born in 1598, so he was about 40 years old when he arrived in the Colony. He had attended Oxford University before going to Leiden. In 1639 he was listed as a freeman in Barnstable, a new town located on the upper arm of Cape Cod just west of Yarmouth, where he was a teacher from 1640 to 1644. He and his family moved to Eastham in 1644, where he was a "Reverend" Teacher until 1655. In that year he became the Minister at the Second Church in Boston and served there until 1673, after which he moved to Yarmouth where he died in 1676.

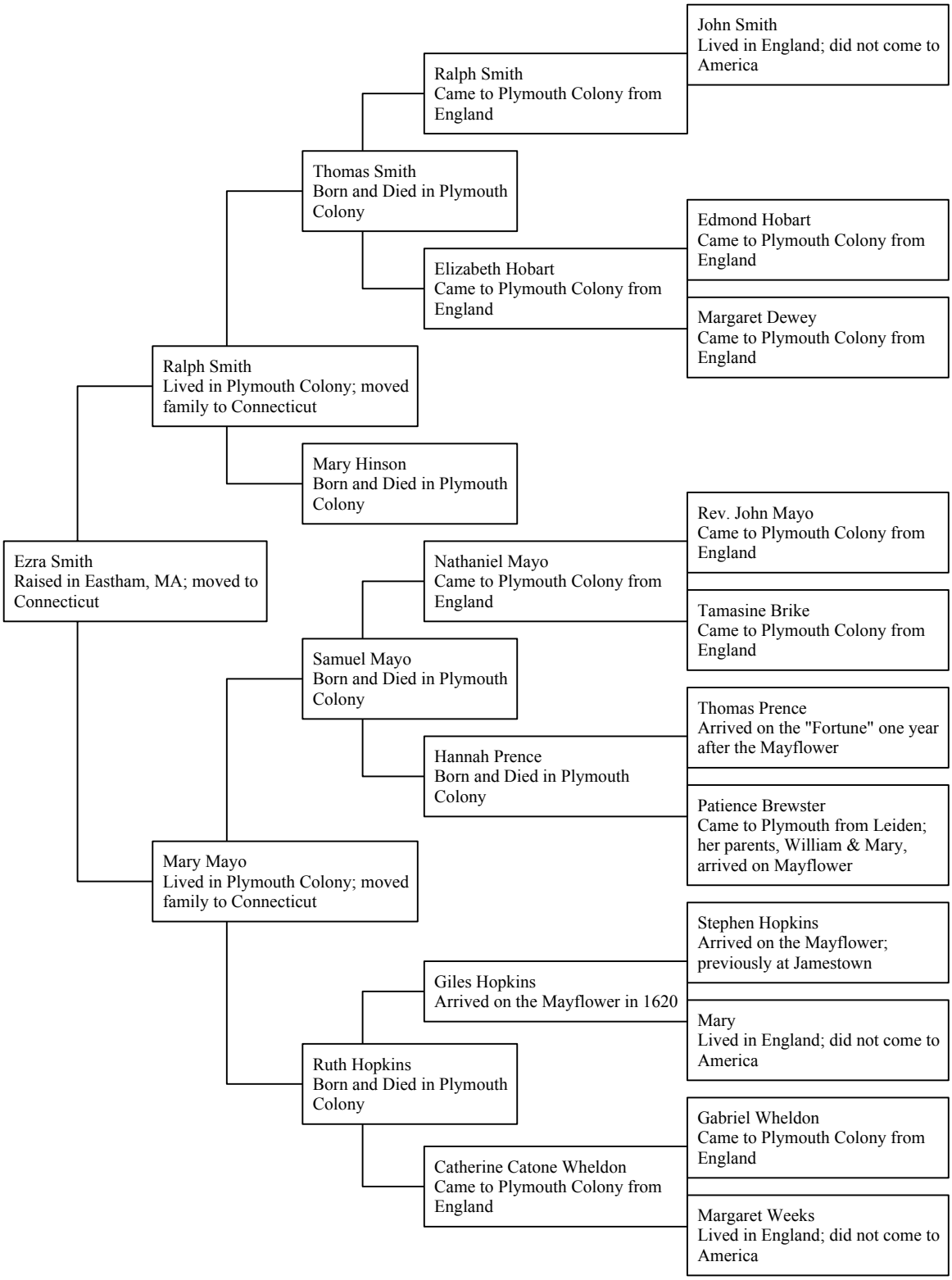
Among the children who came to America with John Mayo and his wife Tamisen was **Nathaniel Mayo**, who was born in 1627 in England or Leiden (the records are not clear). He was about 10 years old upon arriving in Plymouth Colony. In 1649, he married **Hannah Prence**, daughter of Thomas Prence and Patience Brewster, in Eastham.

Beginning in 1644, several families in Plymouth Colony formed a new settlement on the lower arm of Cape Cod, just north of the elbow of this long peninsula. The town was initially called Nausett, after the local native tribe, but was officially renamed Eastham in 1651. By 1650, several of our ancestors lived in Nausett/Eastham, including Thomas Prence; Ralph Smith and his wife Elizabeth; the Rev. John Mayo, his son Nathaniel Mayo and Nathaniel's wife Hannah Prence; and Giles Hopkins and his wife Catherine Wheldon.

In 1653, a daughter was born to **Giles and Catherine Hopkins**, and named **Ruth**; in 1655, a son was born to **Nathaniel and Hannah Mayo**, and named **Samuel**. They grew up in Eastham and **Samuel and Ruth** were married in 1681, and had a daughter named **Mary Mayo** in 1685. Ralph and Elizabeth Smith's son **Thomas** grew up in Eastham and married **Mary Hinson** in about 1681, and they had a son named **Ralph** in 1682. Son **Ralph** grew up in Eastham and married his neighbor **Mary Mayo** in 1712. With this marriage, the Hopkins, Brewster, Prence, Wheldon, Mayo, Hobart, and Smith families were all related by marriage. There were several other intermarriages among these families, including the marriage of Thomas Smith's brother Samuel, to Ruth Hopkins' sister Mary.

I will note here that the studies made by the General Society of Mayflower Descendants have not found documented proof that the person named Ruth who married Samuel Mayo was the Ruth Hopkins who was the daughter of Giles and Catherine Hopkins, but researchers believe that is a correct conclusion based on the process of removing other options. Therefore, I have assumed that this is accurate and that Mary Mayo is the great granddaughter of Stephen Hopkins.

Some of Mary Smith's Ancestors in Plymouth Colony



More Mary Smith Ancestors in Plymouth Colony Area

Mary Smith also was descended from at least nine additional families in Plymouth Colony and the surrounding area who were the ancestors of Bethia Brown, who married into the Smith family after the Smith ancestors moved to Connecticut, and was Mary's great, great grandmother. These ancestors included the Brown, Cook, Moorecock, Harding, Doane, Cooke, Ring, Durant, and Fish families, as described below.

William Brown came to Plymouth Colony in about 1635, from England. He was 26 years old when he arrived. At least one record states that he was a fisherman. He settled first at Plymouth and was listed in 1643 as able to bear arms. At a town meeting there on 10 December 1646 it was voted that those who did not attend town meetings should pay 12 pence, and William Brown was a signer of the minutes.

Apha Audria Cook and her daughter **Mary Moorecocke** arrived in Boston in 1635 on the ship *Elizabeth and Anne.* They came with Apha's husband Thomas Whitten, who was Apha's second husband and the step-father of Mary and her two brothers, Bennett and Nicholas. Apha's first husband, and the father of her children, was **Henry Moorecocke** who had died in England. Mary Moorecocke was 10 years old when they arrived in Boston. Records show that on August 13, 1636, "Mary Moorecock, by her own voluntary will, and with the consent of her stepfather, was apprenticed to Richard Sparrow and wife Pandora for nine years". Mary lived with the Sparrow family until her marriage to William Brown (see above) on July 17, 1649. William and Mary moved to the town of Eastham, on Cape Cod, and had several children, including **Samuel Brown**, born in 1656 in Eastham.

Joseph Harding, Sr., his wife **Martha Doane** and their children came to America in 1630. **Joseph** was born in England in about 1582. He married **Martha Doane** in England in 1624. Their son, also named **Joseph**, was born in Northampton, England in 1627-29. They settled in Plymouth Colony, but **Joseph, Sr**. died in Plymouth in about 1631, shortly after his arrival in America. His Will left all his belongings to his widow Martha. But **Martha** died during the 1633-34 smallpox and influenza epidemic, and their two sons, including **Joseph, Jr**., were entrusted to the care of Deacon John Doane, Martha's brother, who had also come to Plymouth.

Josiah Cooke, his wife **Elizabeth Ring**, and Elizabeth Ring's mother **Mary Durant,** came to Plymouth Colony from Leiden, Netherlands in 1629 or 1630. Josiah was born about 1610 in Leiden, as part of the Separatist community there. He married Elizabeth Ring in Leiden before coming to Plymouth Colony. Elizabeth was born February 23, 1603 in England, the daughter of **William Ring** and **Mary Durant.** They had moved to Leiden as part of the Separatist group that left England for Leiden. **William Ring** died in Leiden prior to 1629, leaving Mary a widow. She came to America with her daughter and son-in-law. **Mary Durant** was born about 1581 at Ufford, Suffolk, England, and she married **William Ring** in May, 1601 in Suffolk, England. **Mary Durant** died in 1631, within two years of her arrival in Plymouth Colony.

After **Mary Durant Ring's** death, the acting Governor ordered that an inventory be made of her goods. **Thomas Prence**, who was not yet any relation to the deceased, was assigned the job of taking the inventory. The resulting itemization of her possessions, with an estimate of the value in British pounds (shown in 00 pounds, 00 shillings, and 00 pence), is included here as an example of what a woman of the period might have in her household. The list indicates that **Mary** brought a surprisingly large amount of luggage and household goods with her to America.

- One peece of black grogerum 00 12 00 - one peece of gray kersey 00 04 00
- one peece of red moll 1 yrd 00 01 06 - one peece black Say 00 01 00
- 1 peece blew Moll 00 08 00 - 1 peece of blew cloath 3 yrds 1 naile 00 06 03
- 1 peece blew Cloath 00 01 00 - 1 peece of blew cloath 00 01 0?
- 1 Gowne of Stuffe 00 12 ?? - 1 black Say kertle 00 12 00
- 1 Red petticote 00 16 00 - 1 violet Coloured petticoate 00 05 00
- 1 Dutch Yock 00 10 00 - 1 pr of sleeves called a buffe 00 01 02
- 1 violet coloured Wastcoate 00 08 00 - 1 Wastcoate mingled coloured 00 03 00
- 1 violet coloured wastcoate 00 01 06 - 1 black Say apron 00 07 00
- 1 huke 01 04 00 - 1 hatt 00 05 00 - 1 old hatt 00 00 04
- 1 murrey apron 00 00 05 - 1 pr white Irish stockins 00 01 06
- 1 pr blew stockins - 1 stomacher for a gowne 00 00 02
- 1 mingled petticoate 00 05 00 - 1 old Coate unbound 00 01 00
- 5 pr of sheets 02 00 00 - 1 peece of new linnen 00 03 00
- 2 doz. tablenapkins 00 04 00 - 2 little peeces of branched taffaty 00 00 08
- 7 smocks 00 14 00 - 1 Diapr Tablecloath 00 05 00
- 3 blew Aprons 00 03 00 - 2 white aprons 00 04 00
- 1 peece to make a case for a bolster 00 02 00 - 2 fine pillow beeres 00 06 00
- 3 fine kerchiefes 00 08 00 - 1 Cowrse kercher 00 01 06
- 2 little pillow beeres 00 00 08 - 1 border for a bearing cloath 00 02 00
- 3 white stomachers 00 01 04 - 1 halfe sheet 00 03 00
- 1 white wastcoate 00 02 04 - 1 peece linnen to make a kercher 00 03 04
- 1 little band for a childe 00 00 06 - 1 ruffe bought of Edm. Gyles 00 06 00
- More 5 Ruffes 00 04 00 - 3 linnen Capps 00 00 09
- 1 ffetherbed & bolster 02 10 00 - fflock bed & an old bolster 01 03 00
- 3 pillowes of ffethers 00 12 00 - 1 flock bolster 00 06 00
- 3 blankets 00 12 00 - 2 Curtaines 00 04 00 - 2 Coverlets 00 12 00
- 1 pillowbeer full of ffethers 00 03 00 - 3 brasse potts 01 02 00
- 2 kettles 00 07 00 - 2 Skellets 00 05 05 - 1 Scumer 00 00 04
- 1 lamp & Candlestick 00 01 06 - 1 warming panne 00 04 00
- 1 Chafing dish 00 01 06 - 1 ffrying panne 00 01 06
- 1 old brasse kettle 00 00 10 - 1 Canne 00 00 04 - 1 pr of Bellowes 00 01 04
- 1 doz. of trenchers 00 00 06 - 1 erthen platter 00 00 03
- 2 Sives 00 01 06 - 1 Grydiron 00 01 00 - 1 fire Iron 00 01 00
- 2 pr of pothooks 00 01 00 - 1 Tramell 00 01 04 - 1 slice
- 1 spit 00 00 08 - 2 pr of shoes 00 02 00 - 1 peece of lether 00 01 00
- 4 platters of pewter 00 08 ?? - 1 fruit dish 00 00 ?? - 2 Basons 00 03 00
- 3 Sawsers & a saltseller 00 01 06 - 3 Cupps & a quart pot 00 03 00
- 2 trayes & a bowle & a wooden platter 00 01 06
- 3 payles 1 Cupboard & a box 00 12 00 - 1 Chest & 1 trunck 00 10 00
- 3 porrengers 1 pewter bottle 1 ladle 00 02 00

- 1 Chamberpott & one glasse bottle 00 02 10 - 1 hogsh. & 2 Tubbs 00 04 00
- 1 chaire & a chopping knife 00 02 00
- 1 bible 1 dod. 1 plea for Infants 1 ruine of Rome
- 1 Troubler of the Church of Amsterdam.
- 1 Garland of vertuous dames 1 psalmebooke - 1 pennery 1 pr hings 00 04 00
- 1 fishing line 00 00 08 - 1 Iron forke 1 tin grate 1 silver whistle 00 02 00
- 1 hatchet 1 hamer 2 plaines 2 sawes - 1 chisell 00 03 00
- 1 peece of redd 2 yrds 00 07 00 - Beaver 13 oz. 00 04 10
- Due from Gov 02 00 00 - To come out of Engl 02 00 00
- Bever due from mr Wynslow 00 06 00
- Due from Goodman Gyles in money
- Corne upon the ground.

Josiah Cooke and **Elizabeth Ring** had a daughter, named **Bethia Cooke,** born in Plymouth in 1640. The family moved to the town of Eastham on Cape Cod after 1650. **Bethia Cooke** married **Joseph Harding, Jr**. and they had a daughter named **Martha Harding**, who married **Samuel Brown**.

Nathaniel Fish came to Massachusetts Bay Colony from England in 1635, with his brothers Jonathan and John. They initially lived in the town of Lynn in Massachusetts Bay Colony, but moved to Cape Cod in 1637 and helped establish the town of Sandwich. **Nathaniel** was born about 1619 (baptized June 20, 1619) in Northamptonshire, England, and was the son of **Thomas and Mary Sprigge Fysh**. **Nathaniel** lived the rest of his life in Sandwich, which is located near the shoulder of Cape Cod, just west of Yarmouth. He and his brothers were among the first ten grantees of land in Sandwich, and it appears that they worked that land until their deaths. **Nathaniel** was married twice, but there is no record of the name of his first wife who was the mother of five sons, including **Jonathan Fish**, who was born in 1655. **Nathaniel** married a second wife, Lydia Miller, in 1664, and they had at least two more sons. Records show that **Nathaniel Fish** owned one-half of a church pew at Sandwich, in 1658.

In 1690 the town of Sandwich bought from **Nathaniel Fish** "the home lot of upland that said Fish now dwells on" and ordered that this lot "together with the skirt of swamp adjoining to it on the westerly side shall lie and remain to the only proper use and behoof of the Rev Mr Rowland Cotton". It appears that he was forced to give up this portion of his property to make room for a dwelling for the Minister, Mr. Cotton. **Nathaniel** died in 1694, and his estate was probated that year. His estate totaled in all about 31 British pounds. He had a two-room house, five acres of upland, three acres of meadow, an ox and a cow, an old sword, a few books, two skillets, hooks and an iron pot, two pans, a 'small old bed' with bedding, and his clothing. He certainly was not a rich man. All of his estate went to his second wife, because he had entered into a marriage contract with her that promised her at least 60 pounds upon his death!

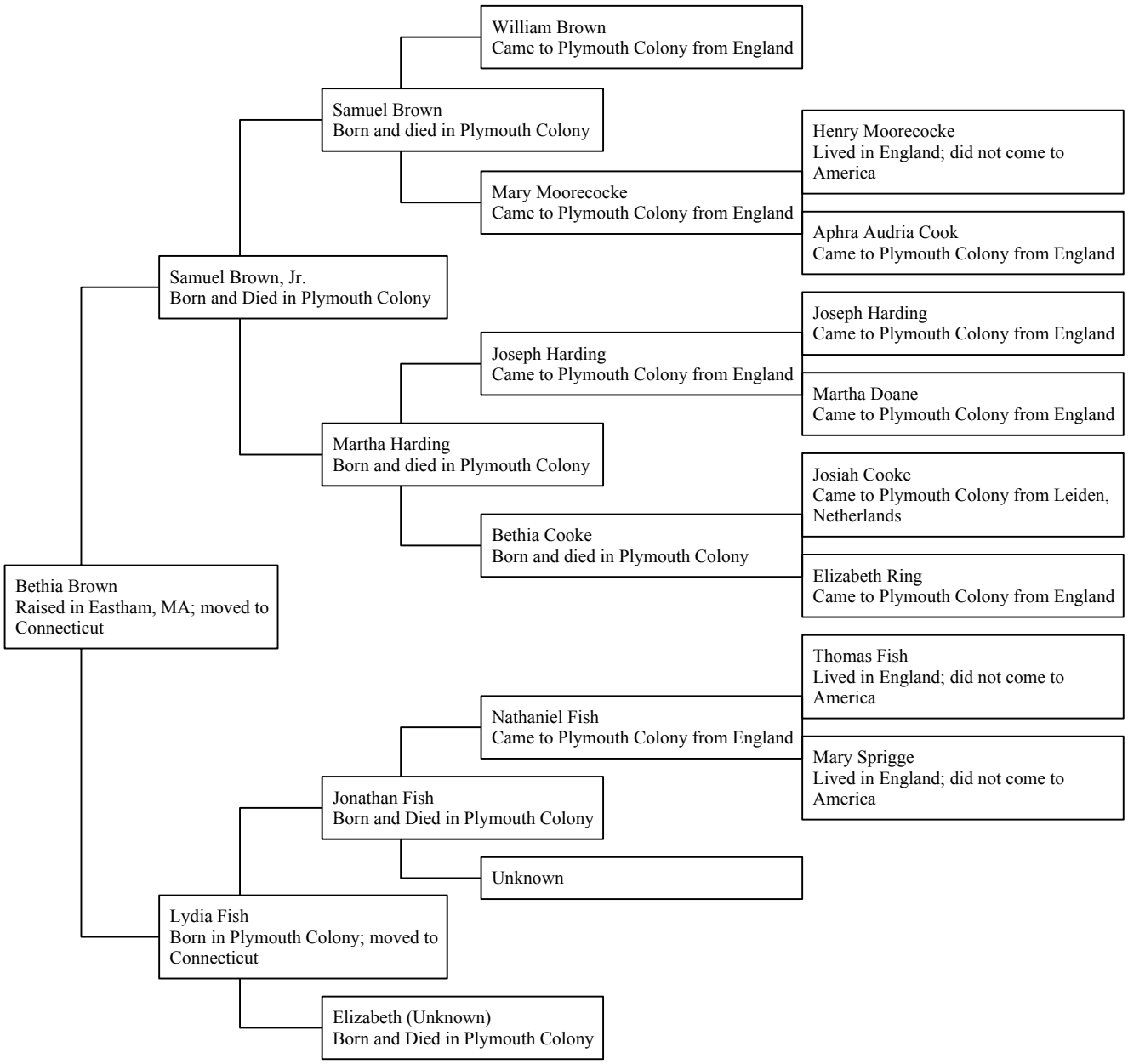
Nathaniel's son **Jonathan Fish** grew up in Sandwich, and married **Elizabeth** (Unknown). They raised a family there, including **Lydia Fish**, who was born in about 1694. **Lydia** married **Samuel Brown, Jr.**

As noted above, many of the Smith ancestors had settled in Eastham, and many of the Brown ancestors also settled in Eastham. **Josiah and Elizabeth Cooke**, and their children, including **Bethia Cooke**, had moved to Eastham. And so did **Joseph Harding, Jr**. Joseph Harding, Jr. and Bethia Cooke were married in Eastham in April, 1660. They had a daughter named **Martha Harding** born in Eastham on December 13, 1662. **Martha** grew up and married **Samuel Brown**, son of **William Brown**, who also had moved to Eastham.

Samuel Brown and **Martha Harding** had several children including **Samuel Brown, Jr.** who was born on November 7, 1690, in Eastham. Samuel Jr. grew up in Eastham, and married **Lydia Fish**, daughter of **Jonathan Fish** from nearby Sandwich, on October 23, 1717. The daughter of **Samuel and Lydia Brown** married into the Smith family, where we will meet them again in Connecticut.

So with all the intermarriages among these early Eastham settlers, Mary Smith was descended from a large percentage of the residents of early Eastham, and was cousins to many more.

Some more of Mary Smith's Ancestors in Plymouth Colony



Ancestors of Moses Frazee Arrive in America

The first ancestors of Moses Frazee arrived in America in 1629, when another shipload of Separatists arrived from Leiden, on a ship also named Mayflower (and usually referred to as the Second Mayflower). Among the passengers were **Thomas Blossom**, his wife **Anna Helsdon Blossom**, his son Tom, and his daughter **Elizabeth**. Thomas had been aboard the ship Speedwell, the sister ship of the first Mayflower that had to abort its voyage in 1620 and return to Leiden. His son who had been on the Speedwell with him had died in Leiden in 1625. His daughter **Elizabeth** was now nine years old. The smallpox and influenza epidemic of 1633-34 mentioned above claimed the life of **Thomas Blossom.** He had been in Plymouth for only five years. Thomas left his 14 year old daughter **Elizabeth** without a father.

Edward Fitz Randolph was among the new arrivals from England in the Winthrop migration in 1630. He settled in a new town called Scituate, about half way between Plymouth and Boston, under the jurisdiction of Plymouth Colony. Edward was about 23 years old at the time. He was born in Nottinghamshire, England in 1607. **Edward** is said to have built the 39th house in Scituate, Plymouth Colony in 1636. He was called a yeoman (meaning a farmer of his own land). **Edward** married **Elizabeth Blossom**, the daughter of **Thomas Blossom**, in 1637. In 1639, **Edward Fitz Randolph** and his wife **Elizabeth** moved from the town of Scituate to the town of Barnstable, near Yarmouth. He was named a juryman in 1641, and his name appears in the list of those able to bear arms in Plymouth in 1643. In 1669 he moved his family to Piscataway, New Jersey, because he believed the religion-dominated governments in New England were too restrictive.

William Palmer and his wife **Judith Feake Palmer** also came to Plymouth Colony during the Great Migration. William was born between 1610 and 1615 and Judith was born in 1615, both in London, where they were married in 1637. They came to Plymouth Colony shortly after their marriage. They were among the first settlers of the new town of Yarmouth, located on the upper arm of Cape Code. William joined the Plymouth Colony militia under Miles Standish in 1638 as an Ensign, and was promoted to Lieutenant in 1642. The Court at Plymouth in 1642 ordered "that the company against the Indieans should have Miles Stanish as Captain and William Palmer as Lieutenant", as Standish continued his obsession with harassing the natives and building up this early version of the Pentagon. William and Judith had several children born in Yarmouth, and three of them are ancestors of Moses R. Frazee (as a result of cousins marrying cousins). We will meet up with them in subsequent chapters.

Robert Dennis came to Plymouth Colony from England during this period, and settled in Yarmouth. He was in his 20s when he came to America. In Yarmouth, he had property adjoining that of **Giles Hopkins.** I do not have information on his wife, other than her name was **Mary**. In 1643 they had a son named **John Dennis**. The family moved to what is now New Jersey in about 1665.

As noted above, Stephen and Giles Hopkins, and Gabriel Wheldon, ancestors of Mary Smith also settled in Yarmouth. So the records show that at least three ancestors of Mary Smith and at least three ancestors of Moses R. Frazee lived in Yarmouth in 1639. Within a few miles of each other, in Yarmouth and Barnstable, were several ancestors of Mary Smith, through her great, great grandfather Ezra Smith, and ancestors of **two** great grandmothers of Moses R. Frazee.

The Great Migration also brought several other ancestors of Moses R. Frazee to New England. One was **Thomas Bloomfield**, who settled in Newburyport (also called Newbury), located several miles north of Boston, near the present-day border with New Hampshire. He came from Suffolk, England in about 1638 with his adult children, and it appears that he died within a year or two after arriving in America.

One of Thomas Bloomfield's children who arrived with him from England was **Thomas Bloomfield, Jr**., who came with his wife Mary (maiden name is unknown), also from Suffolk, England, in about 1638. Thomas, Jr. was born in about 1615 in Woodbridge, Suffolk, England. Thomas and his wife Mary had nine children: Mary, **Sarah**, John, Thomas, Nathaniel, Ezekiel, Rebecca, Ruth and Timothy.

Sarah Bloomfield, the second child of Thomas and Mary, was born in Newburyport on December 30, 1643. The Bloomfield family lived in Newburyport for about 27 years, until 1665, when they moved to New Jersey. The Bloomfield and the Robert Dennis families both moved to what is now New Jersey at about the same time, and Sarah Bloomfield married Robert Dennis' son **John Dennis** in New Jersey in 1668.

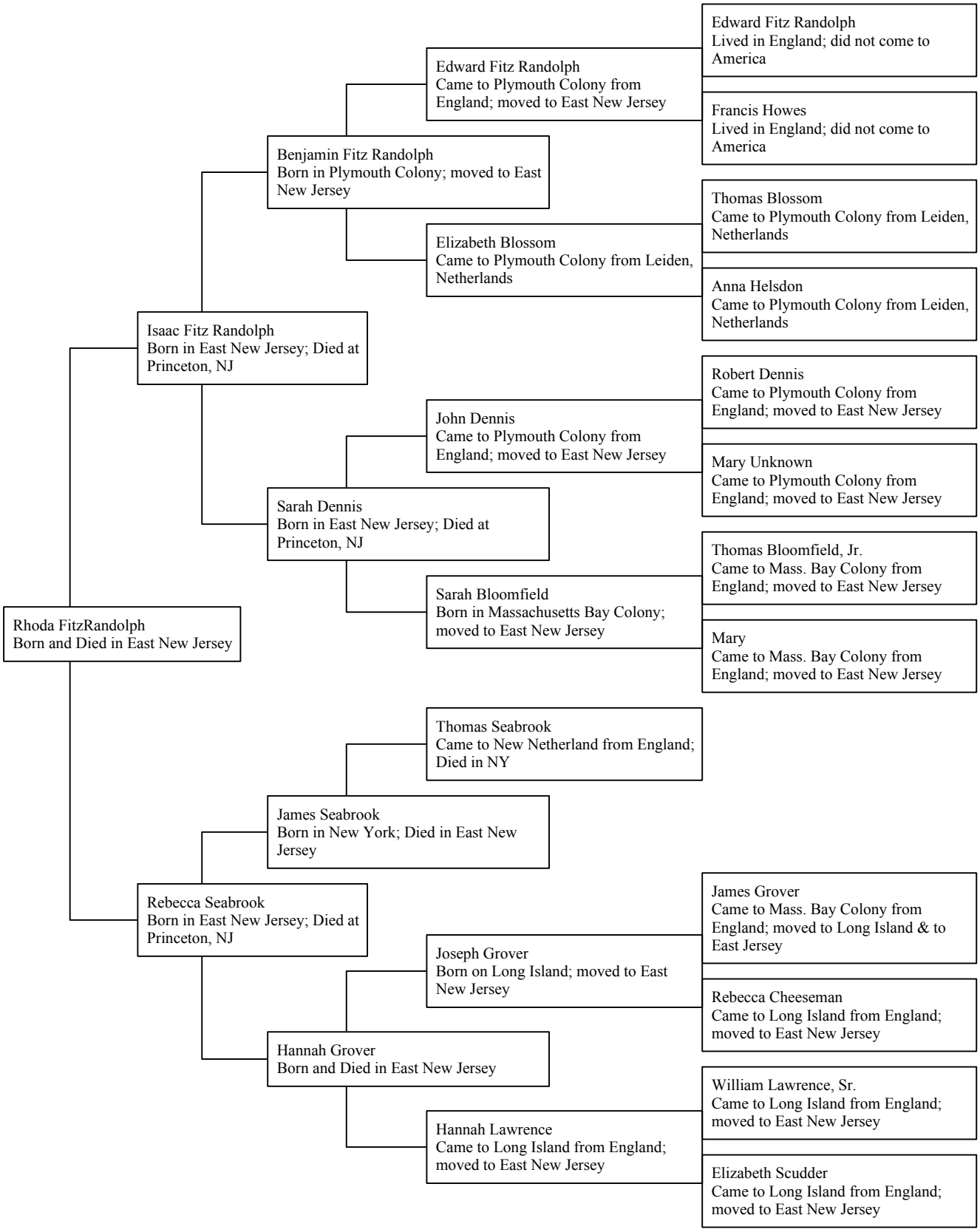
Another ancestor of Moses R. Frazee in Massachusetts Bay Colony was **James Grover** who emigrated from Chesham, England in 1639. Records show that he was apprenticed to a James Hubbard (basically he was an indentured servant). He apparently lived at Hubbard's residence in the settlement of Lynn, located a few miles north of Boston. Hubbard and Grover left the colony in about 1643 and went to New Netherland (see more on Grover in that Chapter).

An additional ancestor of Moses R. Frazee in Massachusetts Bay Colony was **Thomas Denham** who was born in Leiden, Holland in 1621. The records are not clear as to when he came to New England, but he settled in Sheepscott, along the coast of what is now Maine. He married **Sarah Bompasse**, the daughter of **Edward Bompasse** from England, in about 1650. He and his family apparently were still living there at the time of King Phillip's War in 1675-76, because his Last Will refers to lands that he owned there even though he and his family had fled to New York in 1677.

The descendants of these Frazee ancestors made their way to what is now New York and New Jersey, where they married into the Frazee families, and we will meet up with them in subsequent chapters.

The records indicate that all of the ancestors of Mary Smith and Moses R. Frazee who settled in New England arrived between 1620 and 1650. I have not found any records of Esther's ancestors arriving in New England after 1650. Subsequent arrivals came into other colonies in America. And all of these New England ancestors were from England, or were English who had moved to Leiden, Netherlands with the Separatists. Esther's mother and her father both were descended from English people who came to New England, primarily Plymouth Colony, with the very earliest European settlers.

Some of Moses R. Frazee's Ancestors in & near Plymouth Colony



Making a Living

How did these immigrants to New England make a living? In the first years, most of the men and boys needed to devote much of their time to farming and hunting (including digging for shellfish), just to survive, and many of the women also worked in the gardens and corn fields and caring for livestock. But the men also needed to work as carpenters to build houses and common buildings, and all able-bodied men were members of the militia, trained to defend the settlement. Only a few of the men at Plymouth were able to devote most of their time to specialized activities; Miles Standish focused on militia issues; William Brewster spent much of his effort on tending to the religious issues of the colony; and William Bradford was busy performing his duties as Governor, which included resolving disputes and dealing with those who broke the law.

With the Great Migration, there were more opportunities for specialization, including various trades people, merchants, traders, teachers, pastors, and militia men. But most of the families continued to have some land where they had large gardens and some livestock. This influx of people also brought some who were experienced fishermen, and even some who were whalers. So fishing and whaling, and the associated business of building and repairing boats, became a significant part of the industry of New England by 1650, although agriculture was still the predominant business.

Farming in the 1600s was a very labor-intensive business. Soil was tilled by hand or with crude wooden plows; seed was sown by hand; cultivating was with a hoe; hay and grain cutting was with a hand sickle; and thrashing was with a flail. There was some limited use of oxen or horses for plowing, and to pull wagons, but most of the effort was human labor

Among our ancestors, the records indicate that Ralph Smith was a trader and merchant in Hingham, working with his brother-in-law Joshua Hobart. The term "trading" probably included trading with the Native Americans for furs and corn. He continued working as a trader after he moved to Eastham. William Palmer apparently was at least a part-time paid member of the militia; John Mayo was a teacher and pastor; and Gabriel Whalen was at least a part-time fisherman. But they all had parcels of land for farming. And it appears that Giles Hopkins, Nathaniel Mayo, Robert and John Dennis, and Edward Fitz Randolph were primarily farmers.

Ralph Smith's son Thomas became quite wealthy from some unspecified business activities based in Eastham. He may have continued his father's business as a trader. When he died in 1720 his Last Will described a large amount of land and other property, including some "Negro" slaves. This is the only evidence found of any of these New England ancestors owning slaves.

No Separation of Church and State

As the New England colonies grew in the 1630s and 40s, the governments of Plymouth Colony and Massachusetts Colony also grew and developed more formal institutions. From the beginnings, these colonies were basically church congregations, with generally accepted moral beliefs. Both colonial governments were dominated by the Puritan or Separatist religious leaders, and the government institutions were used to enforce their religious beliefs. As the influx of immigrants grew, the Governors and their associates became more and more concerned about the moral purity of the colonies, and the need for more strict enforcement of their standards of behavior. Premarital sex and adultery, or marriage to a native, were grounds for whipping, banishment from the colony, or worse. And "sodomy" or "buggery" were even worse sins. In 1642, a 17 year old servant in the Colony was convicted of having sexual relations with "a mare, a cow, two goats" and other farm animals. For his crime he was executed after watching the killing of each of his animal paramours, and they were all buried in a common pit.

The Governors were completely opposed to even any discussion of permitting religious tolerance in the colonies, and Roger Williams was banished from Massachusetts Bay Colony for "new and dangerous opinions" calling for religious and political freedoms, including separation of church and state. He left to establish the colony of Rhode Island and the town of Providence in 1636. Providence then became a haven for many other colonists fleeing religious intolerance. In 1646, the Massachusetts Bay colony general court approved a law that made religious heresy punishable by death. Quakers who had immigrated to the Plymouth and Massachusetts Bay colonies were persecuted with a vengeance, culminating in the hanging of four Quaker men in Boston in the years 1659 to 1661.

It is ironic that the Separatists and the Puritans had fled England because the government of England was imposing the religious beliefs of the Church of England upon its citizens. The Separatists had fled to Holland because Holland believed in the separation of church and state, and permitted religious groups to practice their religion as they wished as long as they did not interfere with the lives of those outside their congregation. When these Separatists came to America they introduced the same kind of religion-dominated government that they had so vehemently opposed in England. And as in England, many of the early inhabitants of New England began to move to other locations in America where they had more freedom.

Terrorism Against Native Americans

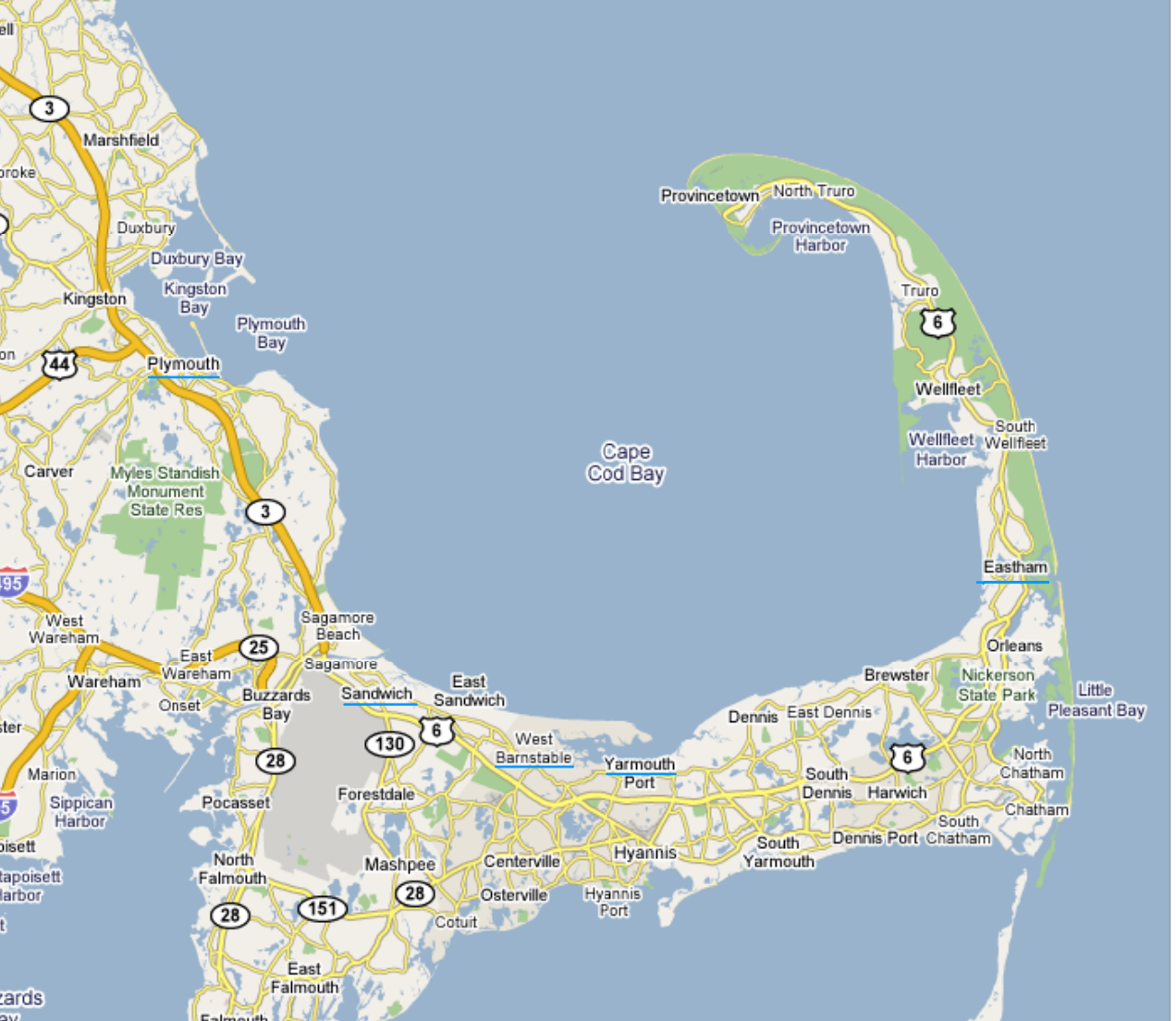
The belief by the Puritans and Separatists that god was on their side probably contributed to their brutal attacks on Native Americans. An example of this was the so-called "Pequot War" of 1637. The Pequot tribe was located in the Connecticut River valley. In efforts to defend their lands from the European invasion, they had killed the captains of several English trading vessels that had arrived in the area. The Puritans of Massachusetts Bay, joined by Plymouth Colony, used these killings as a reason to attack the Pequots and hopefully eliminate them as a threat to Puritan expansion into the Connecticut River valley. A large party of militia soldiers from

the two colonies attacked the Pequot fortress on the Mystic River and proceeded to slaughter over 400 Pequot men, women and children. After setting the fort and wigwams on fire, they shot or hacked to death any who tried to escape. Governor Bradford wrote: "It was a fearful sight to see them thus frying in the fire and the streams of blood quenching the same, and horrible was the stink and scent thereof; but the victory seemed a sweet sacrifice, and they gave praise thereof to God."

Prior to this massacre, the Pequots had urged other tribes in the area to join together to resist the colonial expansion, but the tribes were unable to put aside their ancient feuds in order to oppose the Europeans.

Map of Cape Cod Area

The next page presents a map of Cape Cod, which shows the towns where Esther's ancestors lived, including Eastham, Yarmouth, Barnstable and Sandwich. It also shows the settlement of Plymouth on the western shore of Cape Cod Bay.


Marshfield
Duxbury
Duxbury Bay
Kingston
Kingston Bay
Plymouth Bay
Plymouth
Carver
Myles Standish Monument State Res
West Wareham
East Wareham
Wareham
Onset
Buzzards Bay
Sagamore Beach
Sagamore
Sandwich
East Sandwich
Marion
Sippican Harbor
Pocasset
Forestdale
West Barnstable
Yarmouth Port
Mashpee
Centerville
Hyannis
Hyannis Port
Osterville
Cotuit
North Falmouth
East Falmouth
Provincetown
North Truro
Provincetown Harbor
Truro
Wellfleet
Wellfleet Harbor
South Wellfleet
Eastham
Orleans
Brewster
Nickerson State Park
Little Pleasant Bay
Dennis
East Dennis
South Dennis
Harwich
North Chatham
Chatham
South Chatham
Dennis Port
South Yarmouth
Cape Cod Bay
3
44
25
6
130
28
151

Chapter 6: New Netherland

Beginnings of New Netherland

While the Separatists and Puritans from England were settling in New England, the Dutch were busy building settlements in what was called New Netherland. The Dutch attention to this area of North America began after Henry Hudson explored what came to be known as the Hudson River in 1609. He was an Englishman working for the Dutch West India Company, and reported to his employers the opportunities for fur trading with the Indians on the Hudson River. In 1610 a Dutch commercial venture explored the area, and in 1612 the Admiralty of Amsterdam sent expeditions to the area in search of a northwest passage to China. As early as 1613 the Dutch had set up a trading post in what was later called New Amsterdam - what we now know as Manhattan in New York City. Several expeditions charted the coastline, bays and rivers in the region, between Cape Cod and the south side of Delaware Bay.

The results of these explorations, surveys and charts made from 1609-1614, were consolidated in a map and presented to the States General (the ruling body of the Netherlands) in 1614. The map named New Netherland for the first time and was delivered on behalf of various competing trading companies in the Hudson River region. They had amalgamated in a new company named The New Netherland Company. New Netherland included basically what we now call New York, New Jersey, Delaware and the western part of Connecticut and part of eastern Pennsylvania.

In the summer of 1624, the Dutch East India Company delivered the first colonists on Noten Eylant, now Governor's Island, in New Netherland. They came from the Flemish Walloon communities in Amsterdam, Haarlem and Leiden and comprised thirty families. In June, 1625, forty-five more colonists disembarked on Governors Island from three ships named Horse, Cow and Sheep which also delivered 103 horses, steers and cows, in addition to numerous pigs and sheep.

In addition to the Governors Island settlement, the Dutch had built forts or trading posts in several wide ranging locations, including one far up the Hudson River near present day Albany, New York, one along the Delaware River in present day New Jersey, and on the Connecticut River near present day Hartford, Connecticut. The forts were to help deter other European countries from the area and to conduct fur trading with the natives. In 1625 the Dutch established Fort Amsterdam on Manhattan Island, and in 1626, Peter Minuit, a Dutch colonist, "bought" Manhattan island from Native Americans for 60 guilders (about $24) and named the island New Amsterdam.

The Dutch also established a whaling village on the southern shore of Delaware Bay called Swanendael (Valley of the Swans) near what is now Lewes, Delaware, but the village was soon destroyed in a raid by natives. The Dutch also constructed Fort Beversrede in 1648 on the Schuylkill River (at Philadelphia) and Fort Casimir in 1651 (at Newcastle, DE) to defend their territory against the Swedes who had established a colony under the Swedish West India Company in Delaware. In 1655

New Netherland defeated New Sweden and occupied the Swedish stronghold, Fort Christiana (Wilmington).

Settlement in New Netherland was slow compared to the New England colonies, in part because citizens of the Netherlands were not seeking to flee their country, unlike the Puritans of England. The founding document of the Dutch Republic, the 1579 Union of Utrecht, specifically prohibited persecuting someone by reason of his religion. The Dutch "constitution" stated (as translated) "that everyone shall remain free in religion and that no one may be persecuted or investigated because of religion." This concept of freedom of religion, and its essential partner, separation of church and state, was completely unique in Europe, and probably in the world, and it resulted in the Netherlands becoming a refuge for people being persecuted in other countries for their religious beliefs.

In 1633 the authorities in Italy, controlled by the Catholic Church, convicted Galileo of heresy for scientifically confirming Corpernicus' position that the earth revolved around the sun rather than the sun revolving around the earth. He was sentenced to life imprisonment and his published works were banned. But in Leiden, Netherlands they published Galileo's banned books and openly promoted his findings. (It wasn't until 1972 that the Pope admitted that the Church may have been mistaken in their treatment of Galileo.)

This freedom is why the Separatists from England had fled to Holland, and the country had similar refugees from France, Sweden, and the German states, as well as Jews from many areas of Europe. And the Netherlands had become the center of intellectual thought and exchange because of this freedom. Unlike the Puritans fleeing to America, the natives of the Netherlands were not seeking freedom elsewhere.

When the Dutch founded settlements in New Netherland, this concept of religious freedom came with them. The laws of the Netherlands were incorporated into the rules established for the settlements in the new colony, and this law was enforced by authorities in Holland even when the colonial governor preferred to prohibit the settlement of certain religious groups in the colony. The leaders of the Netherlands apparently agreed with Galileo's statement that: "I do not feel obliged to believe that the same god who has endowed us with sense, reason and intellect has intended us to forgo their use."

Many of the early settlers in New Netherland came for economic reasons rather than political or religious reasons, and they were not destitute. They came with the hope of making money. The majority were single males, primarily tradesmen or farmers, and many of them were not Dutch. One visitor to New Amsterdam wrote that there were at least 18 different languages spoken by the European settlers there.

Ancestor Cornelis Melyn

Cornelis Melyn, ancestor of Moses R. Frazee, was the first of our known ancestors to come to New Netherland. He was born in Antwerp in 1600, and was orphaned at age six. His uncles became his guardians, and at age eight he was apprenticed to learn the trade of tailor, at which he worked until age 18 when he left for Amsterdam to make his way in the world. He apparently had some inheritance from his parents and an uncle, which he would come back to claim in 1626. He was married in April, 1627 in Amsterdam to Jannetje Adriaens, daughter of Adriaen Reyerson. She was 23 years old. They produced eleven children during the next 20 years.

Cornelis' occupation was listed as "dresser of fine and soft leathers" on his marriage license. Apparently he did very well financially in his trade, or made good investments with his inheritance, and in 1638 he had his own ship, named *Het Wapen van Noorwegan* ("The Arms of Norway"). He and his crew set off for New Netherland, carrying a cargo of horses and passengers to be delivered to Kiliaen van Renselaer. They arrived on August 4, 1638. He spent only ten days at New Amsterdam, picking up trade goods, and set sail for Newfoundland and on to France, where he sold the cargo and the ship in the spring of 1639. A couple of months later he left for New Netherland again, on the ship *The Love*, and spent about six weeks in New Netherland before returning to Holland. His experience in the colony apparently impressed him with the commercial potential, and he applied to the Dutch West India Company for a patroonship. To encourage immigration to New Netherland, the West India Company was offering wealthy investors a "patroonship" which was the opportunity to have exclusive economic control over a large territory in the colony if the investor would pay for the transport of at least fifty adult settlers to the colony. The Company granted Cornelis a patroonship which covered a large portion of Staten Island.

With a patroonship in hand he set off for the colony in 1640 with supplies and some colonists, but the ship was captured by pirates along the way and he and the passengers were left stranded. He made his way back to Holland and tried again, leaving in 1641 on the ship Den Evckenboom, with his family and about 40 colonists. They arrived in New Netherland in August 1641, and began building their settlement on Staten Island. However, the natives had other plans, and began attacks on the settlement that forced Cornelis and his family to flee to the safety of New Amsterdam. Some records state that the natives were driven to attack the colonists on Staten Island because Cornilis had built a whiskey distillery, at the request of the governor, Director General William Kieft, and the colonists had plied the natives with whiskey and then took advantage of them. The natives killed several of the colonists and burned their homes, in what is called the "Whiskey War" in 1642.

In spite of these conditions, Jannetje Melyn managed to give birth to a daughter in New Amsterdam on June 3, 1643; she was named **Sanna (Susannah)** and is an ancestor of Moses R. Frazee. And Cornelis purchased two houses in New Amsterdam in 1644, including what must have been at least a small mansion that cost him 950 guilders. Many of the early Dutch houses were built with brick and mortar, and a few of those early houses are still standing today.

Records show that Cornelis Melyn was one of the leading citizens of New Netherland at this time, and was made a member of the Board of Eight Men, which had been set up by the Director General to provide advice on governmental matters. However, Cornelis had some serious disagreements with Director General Kieft, which apparently escalated as a result of Kief's disastrous war against the natives in 1643 to 1645. Kieft had decided to exterminate a tribe of natives to set an example to the other tribes not to mess with the colonists. On the night of February 25, 1643, his men made two surprise attacks on native villages near Pavonia and slaughtered at least 110 men, women and children. The native tribes in the area retaliated with attacks on outlying settlements in the region during the next several months, including the complete destruction of Melyn's Staten Island settlement. Kieft finally resorted to hiring about 150 English men to join his men in attacking the natives, in which they killed over 700 natives. By most accounts, Kieft viewed himself as an emperor in his little colony and usually ignored the advice of others in the colony.

By the time Kieft's replacement, Peter Stuyvesant, arrived from Holland in May, 1647, there was widespread dissatisfaction with Kieft's performance, and Cornelis Melyn and Jochem Pietersen Kuyter, both members of the former board of Eight Men, immediately met with Stuyvesant and brought charges against Kieft. Unfortunately for Cornelis and Jochem, the new Director General Stuyvesant was not interested in siding with any opposition to dictatorial authority in the colony and refused to consider the charges. However, Kieft charged Melyn and Kuyter with treason, bearing false witness, libel and defamation. Stuyvesant found them guilty and Melyn was sentenced to seven years banishment and fined 300 guilders. In August, the ship *Princess Amelia* left New Amsterdam for Holland, carrying Cornelis, Kuyter, Cornelis' son Jahannes, and some others convicted of various misdeeds at the behest of Kieft. They were brought onboard "like criminals". Also on board was their nemesis, former Director General Kieft.

The ship Princess Amelia never made it to Holland. It was shipwrecked in the English Channel, on the coast of Wales, and about 80 of the passengers and crew drowned, including Governor Kieft and Cornelis Melyn's son, Jahannes. Cornelis was among the few survivors, who built a raft from the wreckage and used their shirts for sails to get to civilization. Cornelis made it back to Holland, where he appealed his conviction to the government at the Hague, and all charges against him were suspended.

In May 1649 Cornelis returned to New Netherland with copies of the court orders from the Hague and a safe conduct pass from William of Orange, so Stuyvesant had no choice but to permit him to reside in the colony, but Stuyvesant appealed the decision by the authorities in the Netherlands. In 1650 Cornelis returned to Staten Island and began rebuilding, and he brought in more settlers to take up farming again. But things were just starting to look good financially when Stuyvesant had him arrested again, and confiscated about two-thirds of his property. It is speculated that Stuyvasant was working closely with three or four wealthy merchants from Amsterdam who controlled most of the trading and financial activities in the colony, and they viewed Melyn as uncontrollable competition. And it was clear that Stuyvesant was infuriated that Melyn had embarrassed him back in Holland.

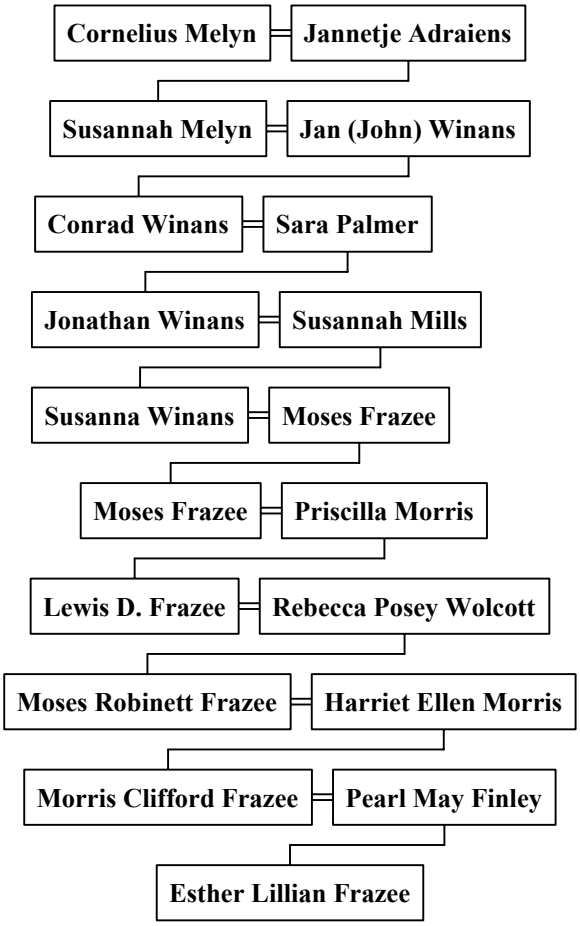
After some time in prison he was released and he went back to trying to make a go of business on Staten Island. Things were relatively calm for a couple of years, but in 1655 a Dutch settler shot a native woman who was taking a peach from a tree in his garden, and there was a new war with the natives, called the Peach War. Over 50 colonials were killed, including Cornilis' son Cornelis, Jr. Cornelis and the rest of his family were among about 100 colonials taken hostage by the natives. Stuyvesant paid a ransom to obtain their release. This was the last straw for the Melyn's, and he gave up his patroonship on Staten Island and moved his family to the English town of New Haven, in what is now Connecticut, which is about 75 miles from New Amsterdam, along the coast of Long Island Sound. He believed they would have more protection from the natives and less harassment from the authorities, in New Haven.

Cornelis lived in New Haven until his death in 1674. During that time his daughter Susannah married a man also from the Netherlands by the name of **Jan Winnans**. Cornelis did not live long enough to learn that his family would be part of the American melting pot, when his grandson married the granddaughter of Lt. William Palmer and Judith Feake Palmer, former residents of Yarmouth, Plymouth Colony.

On the next page is a photograph of a mural at the Staten Island Borough Hall which depicts Cornelis Melyn and the Dutch settlers trading with the Native Americans.

The page following the photograph shows the direct descendants of Cornelis Melyn to Esther Frazee**.**

Direct Descendants of Cornelius Melyn



Ancestor Jan Winans

Jan (Dutch for John) Winans, first appears in official records when he married **Susannah Melyn**, daughter of Cornelis Melyn, on August 25, 1664, in New Haven. The name also was spelled Wyants and Winants. I have not found a record of when he arrived in America, but it is quite certain that he came from the Netherlands, because of his name and his participation in the Reformed Dutch Church. It is likely that he had settled in New Netherland well before the time of his marriage to Susannah Melyn. The Winans name was prominent on Staten Island, and can still be found there today. And historical writings about Elizabethtown, New Jersey indicate that the Winans had resided in Staten Island, so it is likely that Jan Winans had known the Melyn family for several years before this marriage. At the time of the marriage, Cornelis Melyn and his family had been residing in New Haven for about nine years. Jan's occupation was listed as weaver.

Jan Winans and his wife Susannah had nine children, including **Conrad Winans,** ancestor of Moses R. Frazee, who grew up and married a granddaughter of William and Judith Palmer.

Ancestors Pieter Billiou and Francoise du Bois

Pieter Billiou and Francoise du Bois, ancestors of Harriet Ellen Morris, came to New Netherland in 1661. Pieter Billiou was born about 1632 in La Bassee or Wicres, French Flanders, a Belgian territory which was then in the possession of the King of Spain and later became a part of Artois, France. He was the son of **Thomas Billiou and Ann Aime**. He married **Francoise du Bois** about 1649 in Leiden, Netherlands. She was born about 1622 in Wicres, France. They were French Huguenots (Protestants) who had fled to Leiden, Netherlands to escape persecution by the Catholic King Louis XIV.

They came to New Netherland with their children, including **Maria**, Martha, Francoise, Catherine, and Chrestienne. While at sea Francoise gave birth to their first son, Isaac.

Pieter Billiou built a house on Staten Island in the style of his native land, with its steep-pitched roof. The oldest section of the house is built of stone and given the date of 1662. The house today stands as the only remaining building on Staten Island built under Dutch rule. This residence, known as the Billiou-Stillwell-Perine House, is maintained by the Staten Island Historical Society and is open for tours.

In 1664, when the British gained control of the area, Pieter was appointed judicial officer of the first court, and as a delegate to the General Assembly in Manhattan. Then, in 1669, he was appointed as a lieutenant of militia. During the Dutch reoccupation of 1673, he was elected to be the schout and schepen (sheriff and magistrate).

The following inscription is on a memorial pillar at the Church of the Huguenots, Huguenot Park, Staten Island, NY:

Sacred to the memory of PIERRE BILLIOU and of FRANCOISE DUBOIS, both of Artois, who were married in the Walloon Church Leyden April 20, 1649, and emigrated to the New Netherlands May 9th, 1661, and of their daughter MARIE BILLIOU, who married at Wiltwyck, June 3, 1670, ARENDT JANSEN PRALL, who died on Staten Island 1725. May they rest in Peace.

Ancestor Arendt Jansen Prall

Arendt Prall (his full Dutch name was Arendt Janszen van Heerden des Prael) came to New Netherland about 1660. He was the son of **Jan Arendt** and **Barentje Jans**, and was born about 1647 in Naerden, Netherlands. He first settled in Wiltwyck, Nieuw-Nederlandse (now Kingston, New York). He met **Maria Billiou**, daughter of Pierre and Francoise Billiou, who was living with her uncle in Witlwyck, and they were married in about 1670. They moved to Staten Island in about 1672. He was a blacksmith, wheelwright, and farmer.

Arendt and Maria Prall had the following children: Pieter, Mary, Franscintje, Johannes, Borache, Barentje, Arendt, Sarah, and Martha. One of the members of this family was an ancestor of Harriet Ellen Morris, as discussed in Chapter 9 below.

Prall Island Urban Audubon Wildlife Refuge - Present day promotional material about Staten Island refers to this 80 acre strip of land in Arthur Kill on the west shore of Staten Island. It is a nesting sanctuary for six species of heron: great egret, snowy egret, cattle egret, blackcrowned night heron, green heron and glossy ibis. This small island was named after ancestor Arent Jansen Prall. The Prall family was among the first settlers in the area, and they owned the property to grow and sell salt hay on Staten Island.

Map of New Netherland Area

The map on the next page covers approximately the area claimed by the Netherlands, covering most of Connecticut on the east, to Wilmington, Delaware in the southeast, and north to Albany, New York. The population was centered in and around New Amsterdam (New York City).


New York
Amsterdam
Schenectady
Troy
North Adams
Albany
Norwich
Oneonta
88
91
Pittsfield
90
Northampton
Springfield
Binghamton
Catskill Park
81
87
17
Hartford
8
Connecticu
52
Scranton
84
6
Danbury
Hamden
9
Pittston
Bridgeport
Nanticoke
80
East Stroudsburg
Stamford
Hazleton
Wayne
Yonkers
33
Brentwood
Coram
Allentown
New York
22
Holbrook
West Babylon
78
Edison
476
Reading
18
Trenton
222
195
76
276
Levittown
Philadelphia
Cherry Hill
Toms River
295
Wilmington
95
New Jersey
Bridgeton
Millville
Atlantic City
Dover
Ocean City
Villas
Wildwood
Cape May
Delaware

Chapter 7: Non-Dutch Settlers in New Netherland Territory

While Director General Kieft was waging war on the natives, English settlers had been moving into the eastern part of the area claimed by the Dutch, in what is now Connecticut and even into Long Island. Some of the English settlers were those who had left the Plymouth and Massachusetts Bay colonies to get away from the religious repression there, and some left Massachusetts because they thought the Puritans there were not rigorous enough in the religious observances. A good number of the first settlers in this part of New Netherland were Puritans who came directly from England.

By the 1640s there were several English settlements in the Connecticut River valley. The northeastern border of New Netherland had never been well defined, but the Dutch generally considered that it was the Connecticut River, which they called the Fresh River, located over 100 miles to the east of New Amsterdam. Based on this border the Dutch felt they had a claim to New Haven and much of what is now southern Connecticut. But the Dutch were unable or unwilling to militarily defend their large territorial claims, and could do nothing but protest the growing flood of English into Connecticut.

After the English settlers established New Haven in 1638, the flood picked up and English settlers began moving into the areas close to New Amsterdam. In 1650 governor Stuyvesant entered into the Treaty of Hartford with the English that essentially ceded the Connecticut River region to New England, drawing New Netherland's eastern border near the present-day New York and Connecticut border. It was estimated that there were about 2000 English settlers in this area of Connecticut and Long Island by 1664.

It has been estimated that probably one half of the population of New Netherland was not Dutch. The population of the colony has been estimated at between 2,000 to 3,500 in 1655, growing to a total of about 9,000 by 1664.

The population of New Netherland included Swedes who had settled primarily in Delaware, and a scattering of Germans and Finns who were fleeing religious persecution. There were also a number of "half free" African slaves, who were required to make a fixed yearly payment to the company for their freedom. And in September of 1654 a group of 23 Jews was brought to New Amsterdam from the colony in Brazil (which was called New Holland), where the Portuguese had just defeated the Dutch West India Company following an eight-year rebellion.

The Potter Family, Early Settlers of New Haven, Connecticut

William Potter and his wife **Frances,** came from England to the Massachusetts Bay Colony in 1635 as part of a Puritan group. He was 27 years old at the time, and Frances was 26. They came with their baby son Joseph. They initially settled in Boston, and about two years later William Potter's brother, John, and his mother **Hannah** and her second husband, John Beecher, came from England and joined them in Boston. These relatives came to Boston as part of a Puritan group of about 500, led by Rev. John Davenport and Theophilus Eaton. These men decided that

there was a tainted religious climate in Boston - the Puritans there were too liberal for their liking! So they decided to start a new colony elsewhere. They were going to create a Christian Utopia.

This was shortly after the infamous Pequot War in which the militia from Massachusetts Bay and Plymouth colonies had slaughtered over 400 native men, women and children at the settlement in the Connecticut River valley, and the returning soldiers spread stories about the attractive land available there (now that the natives had been wiped out). So the good Reverend dispatched a party of men to explore the area. The exploration party included William Potter's step-father, John Beecher. They chose an area suitable for their settlement, which is now called New Haven, Connecticut. Since winter was approaching, they decided to wait until spring to move the entire congregation from Boston to the new settlement, and they left seven men there to lay claim to the place and prepare for the move. John Beecher was one of those who stayed, and he died there that winter.

In the spring of 1638 the congregation moved to the new settlement of New Haven. **William Potter**, his wife **Frances**, his son Joseph, his mother **Hannah**, and his brother John, all moved to New Haven with the group. Both William and John Potter signed the New Haven Agreement in 1639 that set the terms for the residents of the settlement. William's home lot was located on the west side of the Quinipiac River, near present Cedar Hill railroad station.

William Potter's name appeared frequently in the early records of New Haven, including those showing his increased standing in the church (based on his seating assignments in the church), but also a number of fines for offenses ranging from absence at military training, improper care of arms, to failure to submit a timely inventory for taxation.

In about 1641, William and Frances had a daughter, named **Hope Potter**. She was one of seven children of William and Frances. In addition to Joseph, the oldest, and Hope, the fourth child, there were Mary, Sarah, Rebecca, and Nathaniel.

In 1659 William's mother Hannah died and William was appointed executor of her will. She left two-thirds of her estate to William and one-third to Isaac Beecher, the son of her second husband.

In 1662, William was accused, by his wife Frances and his son (apparently his eldest son Joseph) of bestiality. He was tried and convicted by the New Haven Magistrates (his New Haven neighbors), and was sentenced to be executed by hanging. The execution was carried out on June 6, 1662.

The official record of the trial of William Potter has been retained in the records of New Haven, and is presented below because it provides a window into the thinking of these people who were intent on creating a "Christian Utopia".

At a Court of Magistrates, held at Newhaven for the Jurisdiction,
the 26th of May, 1662.

Present, the Governort, Deputy Governor, Mr. Fen, Mr. Treat, Mr. Crane, Magistrates.

William Potter was called before the court to answer to what charge or accusation as they understand from examination is layd against him, viz: that he hath comitted the sin of bestiality with sundrie creatures.

The Governor told him, that first he must mind him of his carriage before the magistrate: when he was examined, that when you heard what your wife & son testified to your face, yet you was not affected as you should have beene, whether true or false, but stood in a stupid way, making deniall of what was testified that they could not fasten it as a charge against him, yet told him that the puidence of God was soe strange in it, (his neare relations thus charging of him.) that if he was guilty God would bring it forth to light, & soe, with as much solemnes as they could, left it with him & alsoe with Mr. Gilbert to gainne any further discovery as he could; and now it seemes since, (it may be by some better dealing with him in the busines, & Gods jealousie against him.) God hath brought it forth out of his owne mouth; and seeing the church hath done their duty, which they well approved of, they as ministere of justice call him to account, to speake the truth in the case, & deale plainely, as standing before the great God of heaven & earth, his judge & theirs, & to make acknowledgment of the facts, how, when, & with what creatures.

He answered that first when he was before the magistrates he answered with a distinction, & thought their testimony could not take away his life, but being before the church & helped over something that stucke with him, he did confesse & judge himselfe worthy to be cut off from among men & to be given over to be among devills;

And now he confessed more paticularly, the first time he said was in old England, at prentise, when he was about eleven yeare old, & after when he came to New England these temptations followed him, though sometimes they left him some yeares together, & then he thought God did worke upon his soule, & the temptation left him a great while, but after he coming to live at Mr. Gilberts farme it returned againe, & he acted with a cow wiich is now gone, & after coming to his owne farme his lust followed him, though he thought he should have got power against it, &

When the man was hanged for the same act he was much startled, but after still the temptation went on, & it strooke a dampe upon his spirit that it was not right with him, & there he acted first with a bitch, which he hanged thinking he should be free from the temptation when she was gone, but it still pursued him, & he acted this wickednes wth two sowes, one of which was that of which his son testifies, there is alsoe a yeareling heifer, a two yeare old, and a cow that he had beene vilely naught withall this spring, alsoe three sheepe, of which he said he told his wife which they were; these was all he said, only his attempting with his old mare which is now dead; & then confessed that he had gone far from God, but prayed, & desired their prayers, that he might not goe further from him and desired to have what meanes

might be affoarded for his everlasting good, acknowledging the Lord to be righteous whatever became of him.

He was asked with what he covered these wicked courses? He answered that he went on against the checkes of his conscience, & did not consider the compasse of his sin, he had some dislikes of it but was overcome still, & when he son discovered him, he had noe heart to speake to him, but was affected with teares, that he, being an old man, should be a foole in his latter end.

He was minded of his sin before the magistrates, that he should speake soe against his knowne light, & of his excusing it to his wife when she told him of it.

He said he thought his excusing of it to her was a forerunner of these sins after.

Much was said by him by way of acknowledgment of his evill, but in a confused way, as that sometimes he was filled with horror & that his sin lay upon him night & day, & that he was such sins the nature of them did harden his heart, & that he was filled with shame & confusion for the dishonor that he had done to God & that he had caused the name of God to be blasphemed among the heathen.

He was told that such sins was judiciary sins, according to Rom. 1, 24, when men like not to retaine God in their knowledge, they are just judgments of God upon such under such light as he hath lived under, & that he should come to such a degree of sinning & to such an age was a thing to admiration & astonishment of all that heares him.

He said he thinkes now all he did was to be seene of men, though sometimes he had other thoughts, yet now he hath nothing but his sin left upon him & is discouraged, & his sins affright him from God, though sometimes some hopes may be in him.

He was asked what pvoking sin he sees that might pvoke God thus to leave him? He answered that he had neglected duty in secret, & had not kept his watch over himself & way, & was very unconstant in family duties formerly, though something better of late.

He was asked how he was educated? He answered, well, & was taught to reade.

He was then seriously advised & warned to take in the agravations of his sin, for he had beene a continuall liver in this sin from his childhood, & that he had beene exceedingly hardened in it, that he should goe on in it after he saw others put to death for the same acts & such like, & was told that his sins was wonderfull, therefore was wished to be serious about repentance, & to take heed he did not word it out to the last.

He was further questioned, that seeing he had acknowledged more then was charged against him, whether he had not defiled himselfe with any woman besides his wife.

He answered noe, neither with woman, mayd nor child, that was certaine.

The Court haveing considered the case p'ceeded to sentence, & first read the charges to him, & then the Governor asked him if he had anything to say why the court should not p'ceede to judge him according to the law.

He answered noe, but his great matter was betweene God & his soule, to desire him to give him repentance.

The Governor then declared, that seeing it is soe, they could doe noe otherwise, and he therefore in the name of the court did declare to William Potter that the law read was the sentence of the court, to be executed upon him, viz: that he be hanged on the gallowes till he be dead, & then cut downe & buried, & the creatures with whome he hath thus sinfully acted to be put to death before his eyes.

He answered that he had in himselfe the sentence of death before For the time of his execution, it was left to the magistrates of Newhaven with the advise of the elders.

Some researchers believe that William was suffering from a mental disorder at the time, and was not capable of even understanding the charges against him. The above record itself recognizes the confused nature of his responses to the charges. But that did not deter them from carrying out their Christian duties. It's interesting how similar their thinking was to that of some current Islamic religious leaders.

William was given time to make a Will before his execution. His property was valued at 190 pounds, and he gave his farms to his youngest son Nathaniel, even though he was not yet 21 years old. And he graciously permitted his wife (and accuser) to live on the farm and instructed his son Nathaniel to provide her a comfortable living if she continued a widow. He left his daughters Hope and Rebecca each a sum of money to be paid them when their "mother sees good to pay it them."

The execution of people for such "crimes" as bestiality was not unusual in the Puritan colonies of early New England. There was a long list of actions or speech that demanded the death penalty in these colonies. If you should dare to suggest that the religious leaders were using religion as a "device to keep ignorant men in awe", you shall be put to death. Following is a list of the "Capitall Lawes" of the New Haven colony. It helpfully includes references to the verses in the bible that "require" such punishment.

Capitall Lawes

***IT** is Ordered, &c. That if any person after legall, or other due conviction, shall have, or worship any other God, but the Lord God, he shall be put to death,*
Exod. 22. 20. Deut. 13. 6. 10. Deut. 17. 2, 3, 4, 5, 6.
If any person be a Witch, he or she shall be put to death, according to
Exod. 22. 18. Levit. 20. 27. Deut. 18. 10, 11.
If any person within this Jurisdiction, professing the true God, shall wittingly and willingly presume to blaspheme the holy name of God, Father, Son, or Holy Ghost,

with direct, expresse, presumptuous, or high-handed blasphemy, either by willfull or obstinate denying the true God, father, Son, or Holy ghost, or reproach the holy Religion of God, as if it were but a politick device to keep ignorant men in awe; or shall utter any other kind of blasphemy of like nature, and degree, such person shall be put to death.
Lev. 24. 15, 16.

If any person shall commit any wilfull murder, if he shall kill any man, woman or child, upon premeditated malice, hatred, or cruelty (not in a way of necessary and just defence, nor by meer casualty against his will) he shall be put to death.
Exod. 21. 12, 13. Numb. 35. 31.

If any person slayeth another suddenly in anger, or cruelty of passion, he shall be put to death,
Levit. 24. 17. Numb. 35. 16, 17, 18, 19, 20, 21.

If any person come presumptuosly to slay another with guile, whether by any kinde of force, Poyson, or ther wicked practice, every such person shall be put to Death.
Exod. 21. 14. Agreeing with Deut. 19. 19. By parity of Reason.

If any man or woman, shall lye with any beast, or bruite creature by carnall Copulation, he, or she, shall surely be put to death, and the beast shall be slaine, buried, and not eaten.
Levit. 20. 15, 16.

If any man lyeth with mankinde, as a man lyeth with a woman, both of them have Committed abomination, they both shall surely be put to death.
Levit. 20. 13.

And if any woman change the naturall use, into that which is against nature, as
Rom. 1, 26. she shall be liable to the same Sentence, and punishment,
Or if any person, or persons, shall Commit any other kinde of unnaturall and shamefull filthines, called in Scripture the going after strange flesh, or other flesh then God alloweth, by carnall knowledge of another vessel then God in nature hath appointed to become one flesh, whether it by abusing the contrary part of a grown woman, or Child of either sex, or unripe vessel of a Girle, wherein the naturall use of the woman is left, which God hath ordained for the propagation of posterity, and Sodomiticall filthinesse (tending to the destruction of the race of mankind) is committed by a kind of Rape, nature being forced, though the will were inticed, every such person shall be put to death.
Or if any man shall act upon himself, and in the sight of others spill his owne seed, by example, or counsel, or both, corrupting or tempting others to doe the like, which tends to the sin of Sodomy, if it be not one kind of it; or shall defile or corrupt himself and others, by any other kind of sinfull filthinesse, he shall be punished according to the nature of the offence;
Or if the case considered with the aggravating circumstances, shall according to the mind of God revealed in his word require it, he shall be put to death, as the Court of Magistrates shall determine.

Provided that if in any of the former cases, one of the parties were forced, and so abused against his or her will, the innocent person (crying out, or in due season complaining) shall not be punished,
Or if any of the offending parties were under fourteen year old, when the sin was committed, such person shall onely be severely corrected, as the Court of Magistrates considering the age, and other circumstances, shall judge meet.
If any man married, or single, commit Adultery with a marryed or espoused wife, the Adulterer and Adulteresse shall surely be put to death.
Lev. 18. 20. Lev. 20. 10. Deut. 22. 23, 24.

If any person rise up by false witnesse, wittingly and of purpose to take any mans life, that person shall be put to death.
Deut. 19. 16, 18, 19.

If any person shall conspire, and attempt any invasion, insurrection, or publick Rebillion against this Jurisdiction, or shall endeavour to surprize, or seize any Plantation, or Town, any Fortification, Platform, or any great Guns provided for the defence of the Jurisdiction, or any Plantation therein; or shall treacherously and perfidiously attempt the alteration and subversion of the frame of policy, or fundamentall Government laid, and setled for this Jurisdiction, he or they shall be put to death.
Numb. 16. 2 Sam 18. 2 Sam 20.

Or if any person shall consent unto any such mischievous practice, or by the space of foure and twenty houres conceale it, not giving notice thereof to some Magistrate, if there be any Magistrate in the Plantation, or place where he liveth, or if none, to some Deputy for the Jurisdiction, or to the Constable of the place, that the publick safty may be seasonably provided for, he shall be put to death, or severely punished, as the Court of Magistrates weighing all circumstances shall determine.
If any Child, or Children, above sixteen year old, and of competent understanding shall curse, or smite, his, her, or their naturall father, or mother, each such Child shall be put to death.
Exod. 21. 17. Levit. 20. 9. Exod 21. 15.

Unless it be proved, that the Parents have been very unchristianly negligent in the education of such Child, or Children, or so provoked them by extream and cruell correction, or usage, That they have been urged or forced thereunto, to preserve themselves from death or maiming.

If any man have a stubborn Rebellious Son, of sufficient Age and understanding, namely sixteen year old, or upward, which will not obey the voyce of his father, or the voyce of his mother, and that when they have chastned him, will not hearken unto them, then shall his father and his mother (being his naturall Parents) lay hold on him, and bring him to the Magistrates assembled in Court, and testifie unto them, that their Son is stubborn and rebellious, and will not obey their voyce and chastisement, but lives in sundry notorious crimes; such a Son shall be put to death,
Deut. 21 18 19, 20, 21.

If any man shall ravish any maid, or single woman, who is above the age of ten years, committing carnall copulation with her by force, against her own will, he shall be severely and grievously punished, as the Court of Magistrates considering all circumstances shall determine.

Readers might note that after the long list of actions requiring the death penalty, the rape of a young maid above the age of ten did **not** require the death penalty. Apparently the men of the colony wanted to leave themselves a little wiggle room for such indiscretions.

William Potter's family appears in court records again in 1666, as a result of a child born out of wedlock to great-aunt Rebecca Potter, Hope Potter's sister. The Court Record follows:

At a Court held at New Haven the 7th of August 1666

"John Thorpe and Rebeckah Potter were called; the said Rebeckah having charged the said Thorpe with abusing her and being the father of the child she now has; she was told that she was a sad object before the Court, and therefore was now called to speak the truth in the case concerning the person she charged to be the father of her child, and was told that God had spared her life when she was in danger, they desired she might improve it for her good:

"She answered, that one time as she was coming back from the mill, John Thorpe was in the way of gathering nuts, and he took hold on the horse bridle and pulled her down and would have her gather nuts, and they went a little way together, and he said he would lie with her, but she objecting against it, and he answered that he would do a maid no wrong with that, and then he had the use of her body and so he went away; this was in indian harvest last.

"The second time was at Goodman Clark's hulking time. The day before she said she went to the towne and spake to John Thorpe and Sam Cooke to come up to the husk at her mother's; and so they came the next night and, and when they had done hulking as they was going home to the towne, they called in at Goodman Clark's house where she was, (Goodman Clark and his wife being gone to Connecticut and having leave of her mother for her to be there until they came home), then John Thorpe took her by the hand and deferred a private room to be with her in; Martha Wakefield told her they might go into the stone room and so they did and was there an hour or more together; and in the room was a bed and pulled her down and said he would have the use of her body and said again as before that he would do her no wrong, that is, she thought she should not be with child and so it would not be known, etc.

"The midwife was called to know what she had to say in the case, who answered that in the time of Rebeckah's greatest extremity she put her to it to speak the truth about the father of the child, and she said that there was no other but John Thorpe had anything to do with her upon that account: and he was the father of the child.

"John Thorpe was called and asked what he had to say hearing what he was charged

with. He answered that he could not accuse himself, he confessed that he see her the first time pass by him, but he said nothing to her except it were, God be with you; but Rebeckah replied in Court to his face that she could show him the walnut bush he tied her horse to: And for the second time, though he denied that he was in the stone room with her, yet he confessed he was with her alone in another room half an hour; but denied the fact charged.

"The Court having heard what he could say, and finding him false in his answers, and rendering himself apparently suspicious of being guilty of the fact charged by several circumstances, did by way of sentence declare, that the John Thorpe be severely whipped and kept in custody until he give bond for the keeping of the child.

"And for Rebeckah Potter, the court having told her the greatness of her sin by way of sentence declared, That though her fact deserves the like punishment, yet considering her work as a nurse that she only pay two pound ten shillings fine to the treasury, and stand by John Thorpe when the sentence is inflicted on him.

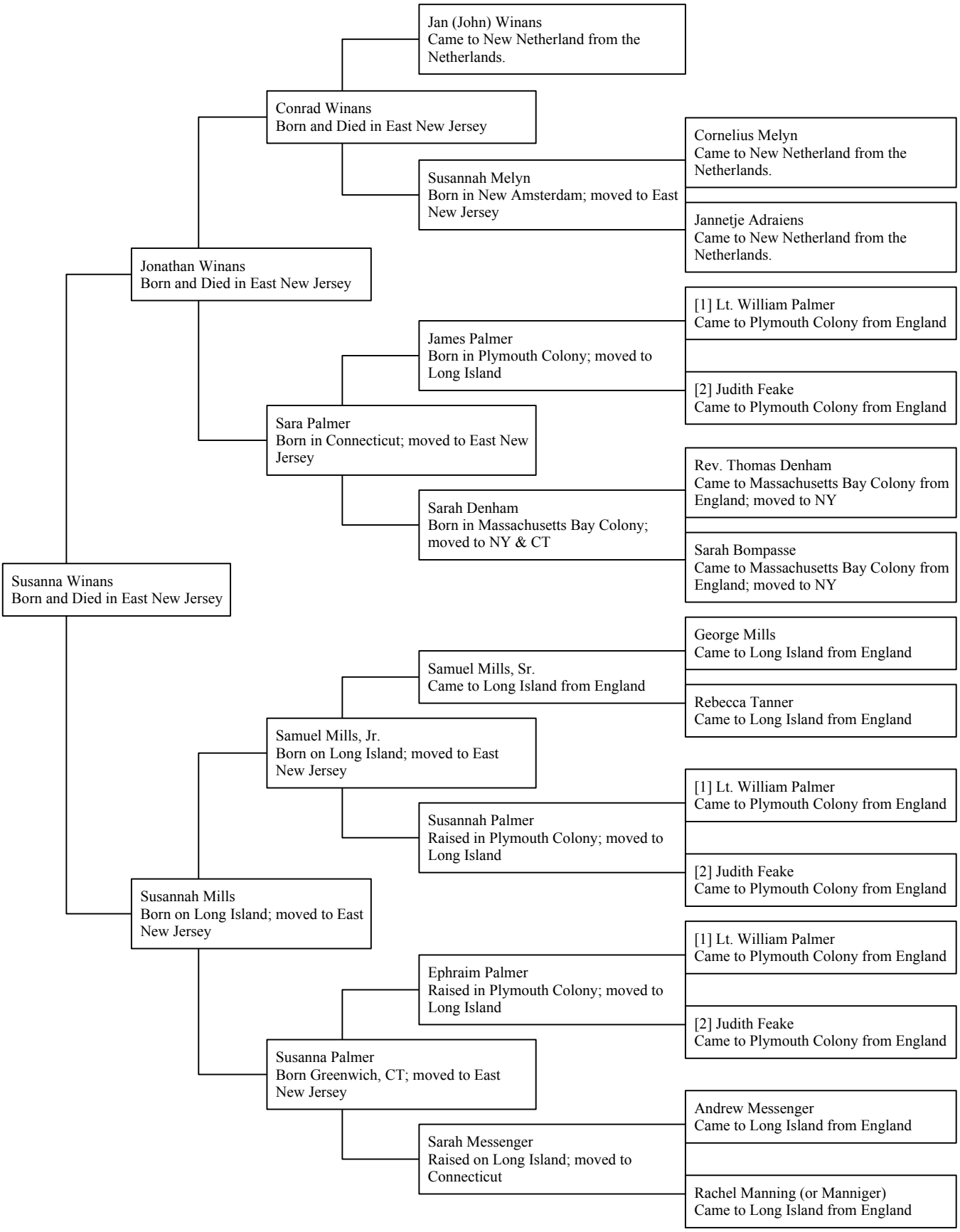
Another Ancestor in New Haven

Daniel Robbins (or Robins or Robinson) an ancestor of Moses R. Frazee, was born in Scotland about 1627. He fought with the troops of Prince Charles II, who was trying to restore the monarchy after the beheading of Charles I, and Daniel was captured in the battle of Worcester in 1651 by Lord Cromwell's army. He was transported to London as a prisoner, tried, convicted and sentenced to exile in the colonies. He was shipped to Boston aboard the *John and Sarah* and "sold" as an indentured servant to Nathaniel Foote and was moved to New Haven. Following his period of indenture, he married **Hope Potter** in about 1663 in New Haven. Daniel and Hope and children moved to Woodbridge, New Jersey in about 1669, after their first two children were born.

Daniel Robbins is the first ancestor from Scotland who I have found in America. Prior to about 1683 there were not any large migrations of people from Scotland or Northern Ireland to America. Records show that about 150 Scottish soldiers captured by Cromwell's army in 1650 were sent to New England, and about 900 were sent to Virginia. After the battle of Worcestor in 1651, about another 300 Scottish prisoners were sent to Boston. The prisoners were sold as indentured servants in most cases. Daniel Robbins was among this latter group of prisoners. These Scots were generally treated as outcasts, and were considered to be an under-class in New England (slightly above the Native Americans).

The following genealogy chart shows some of Moses R. Frazee's ancestors in New Netherland.

Some of Moses R. Frazee's Ancestors in New Netherland



Ancestor James Grover

Beyond southern Connecticut, the English also began settling in the heart of New Netherland, in the outskirts of New Amsterdam. **James Grover**, ancestor of Moses R. Frazee, was one of the first settlers in the town of Gravesend in what is now Brooklyn on the western end of Long Island, and just a few miles from New Amsterdam, in 1646. As noted in Chapter 5, he was one of the immigrants to the Massachusetts Bay Colony during the Great Migration. He was an indentured servant of James Hubbard, who left the Massachusetts Bay colony in 1643 because of conflicts on religious views, and he took James Grover with him. Hubbard apparently was a follower of Lady Deborah Moody who was forced to leave Massachusetts Bay colony due to her unacceptable religious views, and he and Grover left with Lady Moody, and made their way to New Netherland.

In February 1646 Lady Moody was authorized by the New Netherland authorities to establish a townsite at what became known as Gravesend. She and about 20 other settlers, including Hubbard and James Grover, were the first settlers of the town. James Grover was granted a house, lot, and a farm of 20 acres in the first division of Gravesend lands.

James Grover married **Rebecca Cheeseman** in about 1648. She was the daughter of **William Cheeseman** and **Martha Dorset,** both born in England. In about 1652, a son named **Joseph Grover** was born in Gravesend.

In March 1654, Mr. Grover, Mr. Hubbard, and a neighbor got into deep trouble with the colonial authorities. Being English, they decided to hoist the English flag above the town, and declared themselves subjects of the Republic of England (this was during the time when Oliver Cromwell headed a Republic in England and the king had recently been beheaded). This show of treason did not go unnoticed by the Dutch authorities, who ordered their arrest. Grover managed to escape, but Hubbard and the neighbor were arrested on a charge of treason. Lady Moody interceded with Governor Stuyvesant, and the men were freed and the charges dropped. The three of them apparently continued to openly support England, and in 1656, they sent James Grover to England to present a memorial gift to Cromwell on behalf of the English in the colony. In 1657 Grover returned to Gravesend and began passing around a letter of appreciation from Cromwell that he had brought back from England, in which Cromwell apparently encouraged the English to assert their independence from the Dutch. Stuyvesant was informed of the letter, and ordered that Grover and the letter be brought to him, but again Grover managed to escape and was in hiding until the matter was forgotten.

Lady Moody is an interesting story. She came from a wealthy family with both political and religious connections, but also one that believed strongly in civil liberties and religious non-conformity. She married Henry Moody, a well-connected landholder in England who was later given a knighthood, and thus she became Dame Deborah, or Lady Deborah. Her husband died in 1629, when she was about 33. Lady Moody was attracted to Anabaptism, a Protestant sect that rejected infant baptism in the belief that baptism should be administered only to adult believers,

because children were not able to make rational decisions about religion. Due to the repressive climate of Charles I in England, she decided to come to America where she hoped to find more freedom. She arrived in the Massachusetts Bay Colony in 1639. But she quickly found that the Puritan New England colony was just as oppressive. The colonial leaders considered her Anabaptist views to be "damnable heresy." In July, 1643, the Massachusetts Bay governor, John Winthrop, wrote in his journal: *The lady Moodye, a wise and anciently religious woman, being taken with the error of denying baptism to infants, was dealt withal by many of the elders and others, and admonished by the Church of Salem (whereof she was a member), but persisting still, and to avoid further trouble, etc., she removed to the Dutch against the advice of her friends. Many others, infected with anabaptism, removed thither also. She was after excommunicated.*

When she and her group arrived in New Amsterdam, the director general, William Kieft, welcomed her and she was allowed to settle on choice unoccupied land on Long Island. She was granted a patent for the land that permitted freedom of religion and authorized a self-governing town. She was the first, and probably only, woman to found and lead a settlement in America.

Lady Moody continued her defiance of authority when she invited early Quaker settlers to visit her in Gravesend, over the objections of Stuyvesant, and it is reported that the first Quaker meeting in the colony was held in her house. Governor Stuyvesant was strongly opposed to allowing Quakers to practice their religion in New Netherland, and prohibited such practice, but he was overruled by authorities in the Netherlands.

Other non-Dutch Ancestors in the New Amsterdam Area

William Palmer and his wife Judith (ancestors of Moses Frazee - see Chapter 5), who had settled in Yarmouth, Plymouth Colony, moved with their children to Newton, Long Island about 1652. (The name was initially Middleboro, but was changed to Newtown in 1655). Newtown was located just across the river from New Amsterdam, in what is now called the Borough of Queens in New York City. The Palmers came as part of a larger group of English from Massachusetts who started this new settlement almost in the heart of New Netherland. Records show that William Palmer died there in 1661. His wife Judith Feake Palmer, and their children, some of whom were now adults, lived there for a few years after his death, and his wife and younger children later moved to Greenwich, Connecticut, about 30 miles up the coast of Long Island Sound from Newtown, Long Island, where Judith died in 1668. Three of their children are ancestors of Moses R. Frazee: Susannah Palmer, Ephraim Palmer, and James Palmer, as a result of cousins marrying cousins twice.

George Mills, his wife **Rebecca Tanner Mills**, and his son **Samuel Mills,** ancestors of Moses R. Frazee, came from Yorkshire, England and settled in Jamaica, Long Island sometime before 1659. George was born about 1605 in York, County Yorkshire, England. He and Rebecca were married in 1630, in England. The town of Jamaica had been established in 1656, and was a few miles south of Newtown. George Mills was 54 years old in 1659, and his son Samuel was 27.

In 1659 **Samuel Mills** married 19 year old **Susannah Palmer**, daughter of William and Judith Palmer. The couple lived in Jamaica, Long Island all their lives, and had 16 children, including **Samuel Mills, Jr**. who was born in 1670.

Andrew Messenger and his wife **Rebecca Manning,** ancestors of Moses R. Frazee, came from England before 1645 and settled on Long Island. They had a daughter named **Sarah Messenger**, born in 1645 on Long Island. Andrew Messenger died in Jamaica, Long Island in 1680.

Their daughter **Sarah Messenger** married **Ephraim Palmer**, son of William and Judith Palmer, in August 1667. Sarah was 22 years old, and Ephraim, who was born in Yarmouth, Plymouth Colony, was 25 years old. The couple moved to Greenwich, Connecticut, probably when his mother moved there. Their children included **Susanna Palmer**, born in June 1675 in Greenwich.

Thomas Seabrook, who was born about 1646, came from England and settled in what is now Westchester County, New York, just north of Manhattan, in about 1670. He was married to Mary (last name unknown), and they had three children, including **James Seabrook** who was born about 1673 in Westchester. Thomas was killed in an attack by natives on December 17, 1675. At the time of his death he had already purchased land in Monmouth, New Jersey, and his wife and children moved there in about 1675 or 76.

Rev. Thomas Denham and his wife **Sarah Bompasse** and children moved from the Massachusetts Bay Colony to Westchester, New York in 1677. (See Chapter 5). He was a Puritan minister and served as the minister of the Congregational (Puritan) Church in Rye, New York from 1677 until 1684. He was the first minister of the church to live in Rye full time. He and his wife had six children, including **Sarah Denham** who was born May 1660 in Sheepscott in Massachusetts Bay Colony. The Rev. Thomas Denham died in 1689 at Bedford, Westchester, New York.

Sarah Denham married **James Palmer**, son of Lt. William Palmer, in Greenwich, Connecticut in about 1678. They had a daughter named **Sarah Palmer**, born in August 1685, in Greenwich. Sarah Palmer grew up and married **Conrad Winans**, son of Jan Winans and Susannah Melyn, in about 1709, and we will see them again in the next Chapter, in Elizabethtown, New Jersey.

King Philip's War – Native Americans Resist

The Seabrook and Denham families discussed above were both directly impacted by what is called King Philip's War. King Philip is the nickname given to the native American chief Metacomet, son of the chief Massasoit who the early Pilgrims had successfully befriended. (History states that one of our ancestors, **Thomas Prence**, is the one who gave Metacomet the nickname of King Philip.)

In 1675, chief Metacomet led an uprising by several Native American tribes in New England, resulting from their increasing unhappiness with the expansion of the colonialists in what is now Connecticut, Massachussets, and Maine. A very bloody war raged through the Connecticut River valley settlements, in Plymouth Colony, in

Massachusetts Bay Colony, Rhode Island Colony, and with some attacks spreading west to Long Island and the Hudson River area. The Native Americans killed over 600 English settlers, and held many women and children as captive slaves, and over 3000 Native Americans were killed. Entire families were wiped out, and many women and children were killed on both sides. The major part of the war ended when chief Metacomet was hunted down and killed in Rhode Island in August 1676. But some attacks continued in New Hampshire and Maine for another year or more.

For many of the Native Americans of New England, this war was thought to be their last hope of stemming the tide of European occupation of their homeland. By 1675, much of the best lands of New England had been overrun by the newcomers, and those natives who had been promoting peace and accommodation with the colonists were overcome by those who believed they had to fight now or give up everything.

The large loss of life by the Native Americans in fighting was not their greatest tragedy. Over 3000 natives died from starvation and disease during the war. And over 2000 fled to the west. During and after the war the colonies began to systematically capture and enslave Native American men and boys who were considered to be a potential threat. It is estimated that at least one thousand Natives were shipped off as slaves, to the Caribbean and South America, during the War. The Native Americans had suffered a loss of 60 to 80 percent of their population. By 1680, Native Americans made up only about 15 percent of the population of New England.

The losses by the Euro-Americans in the colonies also was huge. As a percentage of the adult male population lost, it is the worst war loss Euro-Americans have suffered. In the Civil War, four to five percent of adult males were killed. In World War II, only about one percent were killed. But in King Phillip's War, nearly 8 percent of the adult males were killed

Ancestor Thomas Seabrook was killed in an attack by native Americans in 1675, probably related to the War. And ancestor Thomas Denham and family had to flee their home in Maine because of the War. But I have not found evidence that other families of our ancestors were killed or harmed during the War.

With their devastating loss in King Philip's War, the Natives of New England were on their way to virtual extinction. They had waited much too long to attempt to resist the invasion. But the near-term impact of this war was to end the relatively friendly relations the New Englanders had with the Natives. It encouraged future attacks on the Native "savages" as the Europeans pushed farther west. And it opened the colonists to continued attacks from Native Americans on the frontiers of their colonies, and forced the settlers to look to Britain for help in protecting them from the Natives.

King Philip's War was just one of a long history of devastating losses for Native Americans that continued to near the end of the 1800s, as Natives continued to resist the European occupation of their lands, the killing of their people, and the forced relocation of survivors to reservations on some of the least desirable land on the continent.

This is an appropriate place to note that the practice of taking scalps from victims of these battles was introduced to the American continent by the European invaders, including the British, French and Dutch. Eight of the thirteen colonies paid bounties for Native American scalps. The Dutch Governor Kieft paid bounties for Native scalps in New Netherlands in the 1640s. The Massachusetts Bay Colony paid bounties for Native scalps. And this practice of paying bounties for scalps of Native Americans was continued by several of the new States of America, including Minnesota. Bounties varied in amount among the jurisdictions, but many paid the most for scalps of men, with reduced amounts for scalps of women and children. The Massachusetts Bay Colony paid the equivalent of $60 per scalp in the early 1700s. New Hampshire colony paid 100 pounds (British) for male scalps. Professional hunters of Native Americans were able to make a very good income from scalp bounties. I have not found any evidence that any of our ancestors were paid for scalps of Natives, but such income was not likely to be noted in any family histories.

End of Dutch Rule in New Netherland

In 1664 an English naval force captured New Netherland in a surprise attack during peace time. The Duke of York, who had been "given" the colony by King Charles, sent Colonel Richard Nicolls to oust the Dutch and to govern the territory. Colonel Nicolls and his four frigates picked up some help in Boston in July, 1664 and arrived at New York in August. Colonel Nicolls succeeded in taking part of Long Island, where he raised a small group of English volunteers and also took part of Staten Island. He then blockaded New York harbor, threatening a siege of the main Dutch fort and center of government at Manhattan. Peter Stuyvesant, receiving no support from the Dutch West India Company, surrendered New Netherland without firing a shot. New Netherland became New York, named after the Duke of York. The Duke's proprietorship included what is known today as the States of New York, New Jersey, Delaware and Vermont. The English justified their attack as necessary to protect their citizens, who had made numerous requests of the Dutch authorities for protection by a suitable garrison against "the deplorable and tragic massacres" by the natives, which they said had gone unheeded.

In 1673 New York was recaptured by a Dutch naval force and New Netherland was restored as a Dutch colony, but only for slightly more than a year. In 1674 New Netherland was restored to the English and became the province of New York as a result of the Treaty of Westminster. New York was subsequently divided, and New Jersey was established as a separate colony. An important condition of the final agreement between Holland and England on the disposal of New Netherland was that the English would respect the diverse religions in the colony and would not impose the Anglican religion. The agreement provided that the residents of the colony "shall keep and enjoy the liberty of their consciences in religion" under English rule.

Although the New Netherland colony did not survive for long, it had an enormous impact on the future of America, because it established the concepts of religious freedom and tolerance of diversity, rather than the lack of religious freedom and the

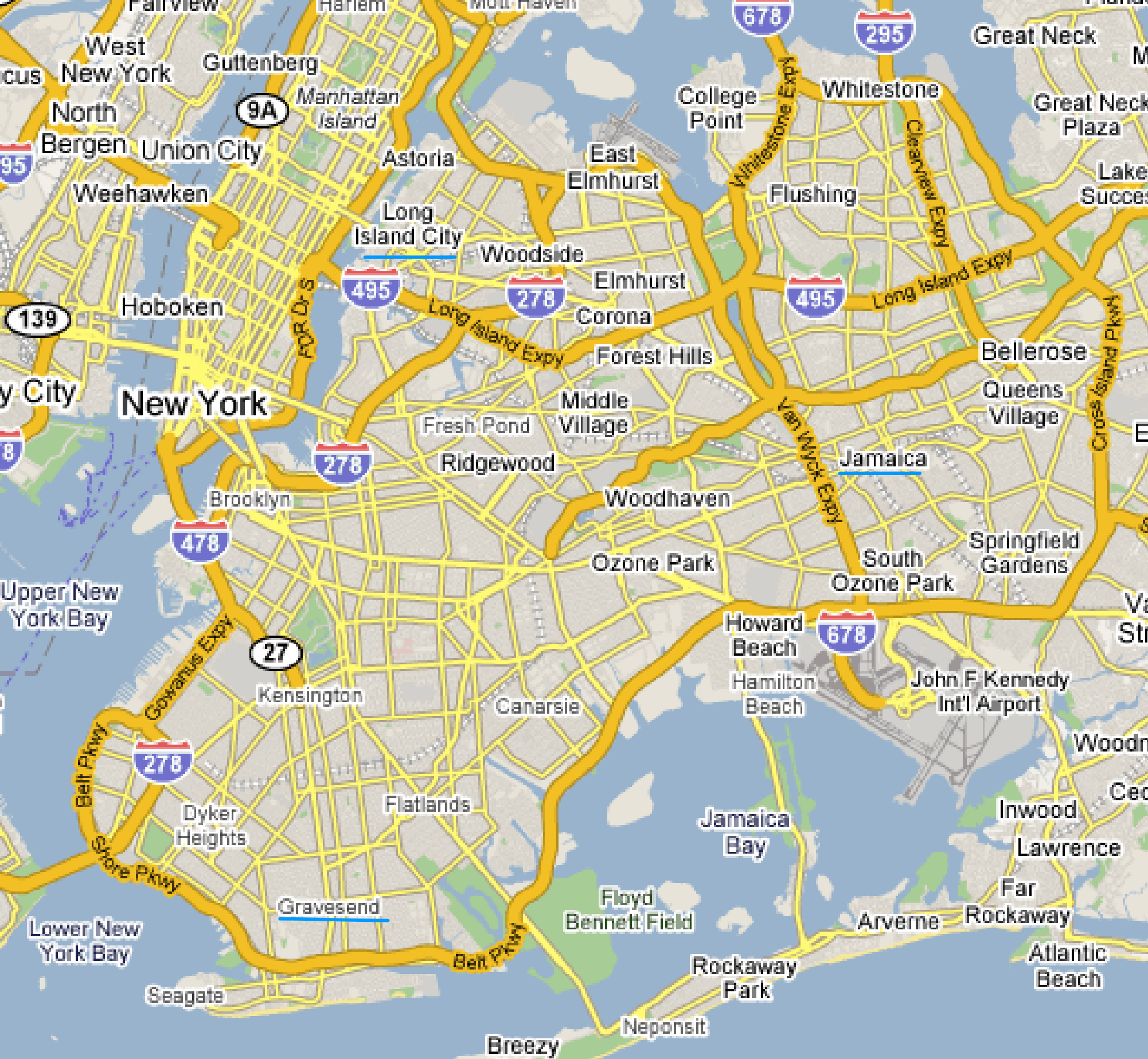
intolerance that pervaded the early English settlements. Incredibly, the struggle between these two approaches to religion, politics and government continues in the United States 345 years after the end of Dutch rule. The Dutch governors and their associates in New Netherland were often not very tolerant themselves, but they were forced by the authorities in Holland to avoid the most blatant discrimination and persecution practiced by the Puritans and Separatists in New England. The region which was the former New Netherland is now seen by historians as the birthplace of religious pluralism in America, and as the origin of the melting pot.

The descendants of the Dutch families in the colony also have had a major impact on American life. By 1790, with the first United States Census, there were over 100,000 families in the United States with Dutch ancestry, mainly descendants of those first colonists. And some famous names were among the Dutch descendants, including the Roosevelts, Van Buren, Vanderbilt, Rensselear and Rip Van Winkle.

Unfortunately for the Native Americans, the leaders of New Netherland were just as savage in dealing with the natives as were their New England counterparts. They made no effort to recognize the rights or needs of the natives, or to minimize the adverse impacts of colonization on the lives of the natives. And as in New England, the native tribes were unable to work together in a common effort against this invader.

Map of Western Long Island

The map on the next page shows the western end of Long Island, where several of Esther's ancestors lived during the Dutch rule of the area. It shows Jamaica, where the Mills family lived; Gravesend, where the Grovers lived; and the Palmers lived south of the town of Long Island City on this map.


Fairview
Harlem
Mott Haven
West New York
Guttenberg
Manhattan Island
North Bergen
Union City
Weehawken
Astoria
East Elmhurst
College Point
Whitestone
Great Neck
Great Neck Plaza
Flushing
Long Island City
Woodside
Elmhurst
Corona
Forest Hills
Hoboken
New York
Fresh Pond
Middle Village
Ridgewood
Brooklyn
Woodhaven
Jamaica
Bellerose
Queens Village
Ozone Park
South Ozone Park
Springfield Gardens
Howard Beach
Hamilton Beach
John F Kennedy Int'l Airport
Kensington
Canarsie
Flatlands
Dyker Heights
Jamaica Bay
Inwood
Lawrence
Far Rockaway
Arverne
Gravesend
Floyd Bennett Field
Rockaway Park
Atlantic Beach
Seagate
Neponsit
Breezy
Upper New York Bay
Lower New York Bay
Belt Pkwy
Gowanus Expy
Shore Pkwy
Whitestone Expy
Clearview Expy
Long Island Expy
Van Wyck Expy
Cross Island Pkwy
FDR Dr
9A
27
95
139
278
295
478
495
678

Chapter 8: Migration to East New Jersey After 1664

Overview of Settlement in East New Jersey

Col. Nicolls, now the British Deputy-Governor of the former New Netherland, ruled the territory from his post at New York City. Within a month of the Dutch surrender, English settlers from Jamaica, Long Island applied for permission to Governor Nicolls to purchase a large tract of land in New Jersey from the Indians. They had tried unsuccessfully to get such permission from the previous Dutch regime. Governor Nicolls confirmed via patent the sale of land in Albania (New Jersey) to the Long Islanders in December, 1664 with the proviso that they should furnish a yearly rent to the Duke of York. This land patent, called the Elizabethtown Purchase, involved a large rectangular-shaped piece of land in the future New Jersey, extending 17 miles along the Hudson from the mouth of the Raritan northward to the mouth of the Passaic, and extending inland 34 miles. The land included the future towns of Elizabeth, Newark, Woodbridge and Piscataway, as well as the existing Dutch town of Bergen (Jersey City). The lands extended westward into territories that would eventually comprise all of present-day Union County, much of Somerset County, and some of Morris Co. Per their agreement with Governor Nicolls, the Long Islanders negotiated and purchased the lands directly from the native Americans.

In April 1665, Nicolls granted a second patent for a triangular-shaped tract of land lying between the Raritan River and Sandy Point. This grant to William Goulding and others was called the Monmouth Patent and would include the future towns of Middletown and Shrewsbury. As with the Elizabethtown Patent, the purchasers were Long Islanders, and most of them were transplants from New England.

In July 1665, the Duke of York's representatives in Britain had named Philip Carteret as the administrator of the area now known as New Jersey, and he set up rules for the acquisition of land, designed to encourage the rapid population of the area. Heads of families arriving by January 1, 1666, if armed and bringing provisions for six months, would be granted 150 acres, with that person receiving an additional 150 acres added for each manservant that they brought with them and 75 acres for each slave or female servant. Servants would receive 75 acres of their own after their term of service - typical terms of service were three or four years. The allotments were decreased for people arriving in subsequent years, to encourage rapid immigration.

The lands were to be laid out in large tracts, except in designated towns. In theory, the lands were to be given away free of charge to settlers, except for the modest costs incurred in making the purchases from the Indians. In practice, however, most persons stayed near the existing population centers where they would have had to purchase lands from the Elizabethtown and Monmouth Patent Associates that came before them.

Carteret sent information about the availability of land in New Jersey, including the assurance of freedom of religion, to English settlements in Long Island and the New

England colonies in the hopes of attracting immigrants. The civil and religious freedoms offered in New Jersey attracted large numbers of New Englanders, many of whom were clearly at odds with the strict religious and civil society of the Massachusetts Puritans. And the terms of settlement in New Jersey perpetuated the lack of strong English rule and lack of control by the Church of England that had already been achieved in Massachusetts. This created the seeds of a strictly American society - with governments and church structures that were independent of those in England and the rest of Europe.

This area of eastern New Jersey was settled almost entirely by immigration from earlier English settlements in America (Massachusetts, Connecticut and Long Island), and from Dutch settlements in the New York area, until the beginning of a Scottish migration that lasted from 1683 to 1687. This was in sharp contrast to the later settlement of West Jersey, which was settled primary by immigration directly from the British Isles, starting in the 1680s. This early success in populating the land did not continue for long. From 1668 until the beginning of the Scottish influx in 1683, population growth slowed. The reliance on the limited population of New England for immigrants was a factor. Population growth stopped completely during the brief retaking of all of New Netherland by the Dutch in 1673.

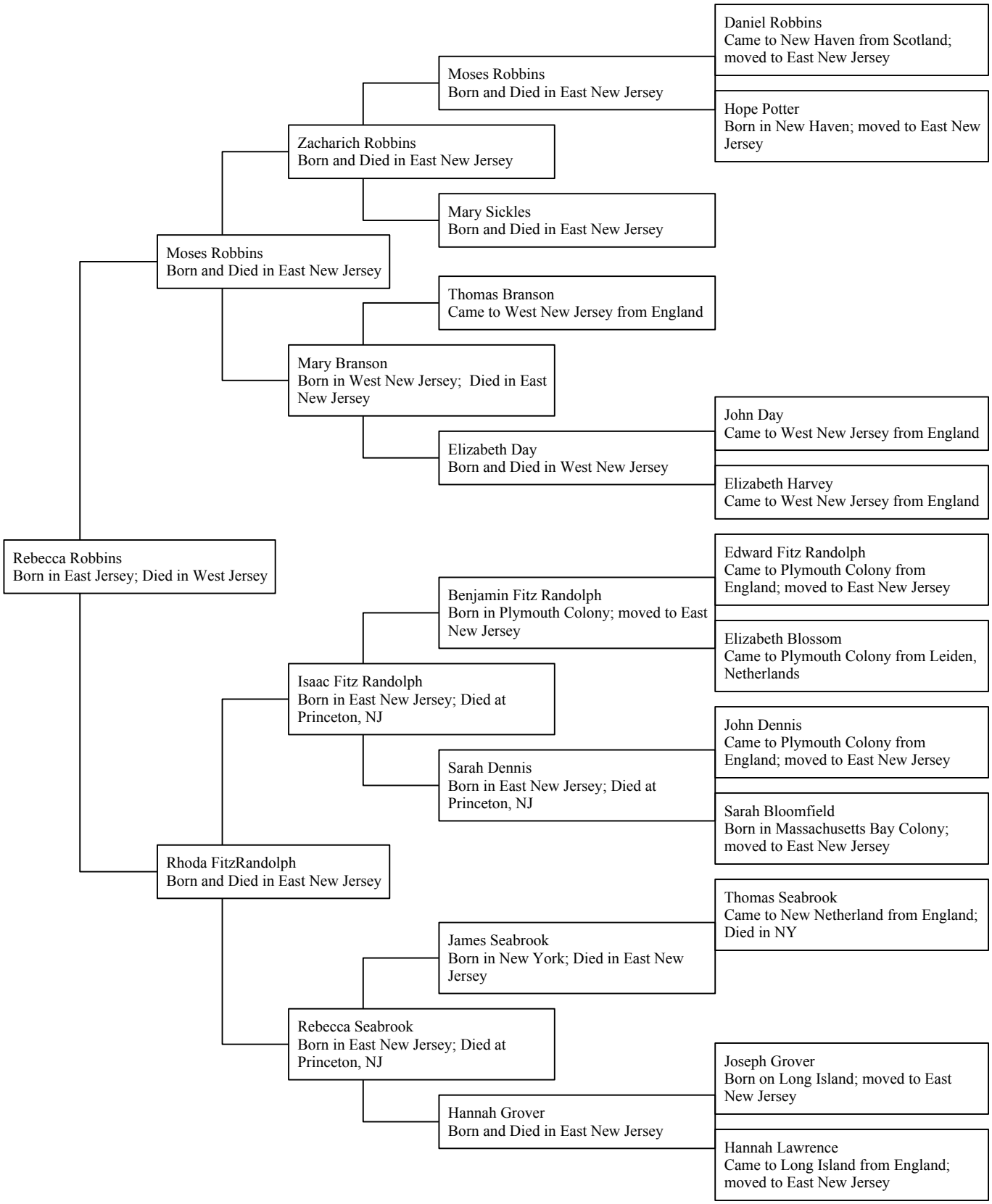
In 1682, Robert Barclay was named Governor of East Jersey by the Proprietors (the men in Britain who were the financial backers of the New Jersey enterprise). The proprietors allowed Barclay to take the lead in arousing Scottish interest in East Jersey, which resulted in a large influx of Scottish settlers and indentured servants occurring between 1683 and 1687. The Scots were largely Presbyterians, fleeing Scotland where the King of England had outlawed Presbyterianism. The Scottish influx helped drive Presbyterianism to dominance in New Jersey. I have not found any ancestors of ours who came to America in this period of Scottish immigration.

Hotbed of Ancestors in East Jersey

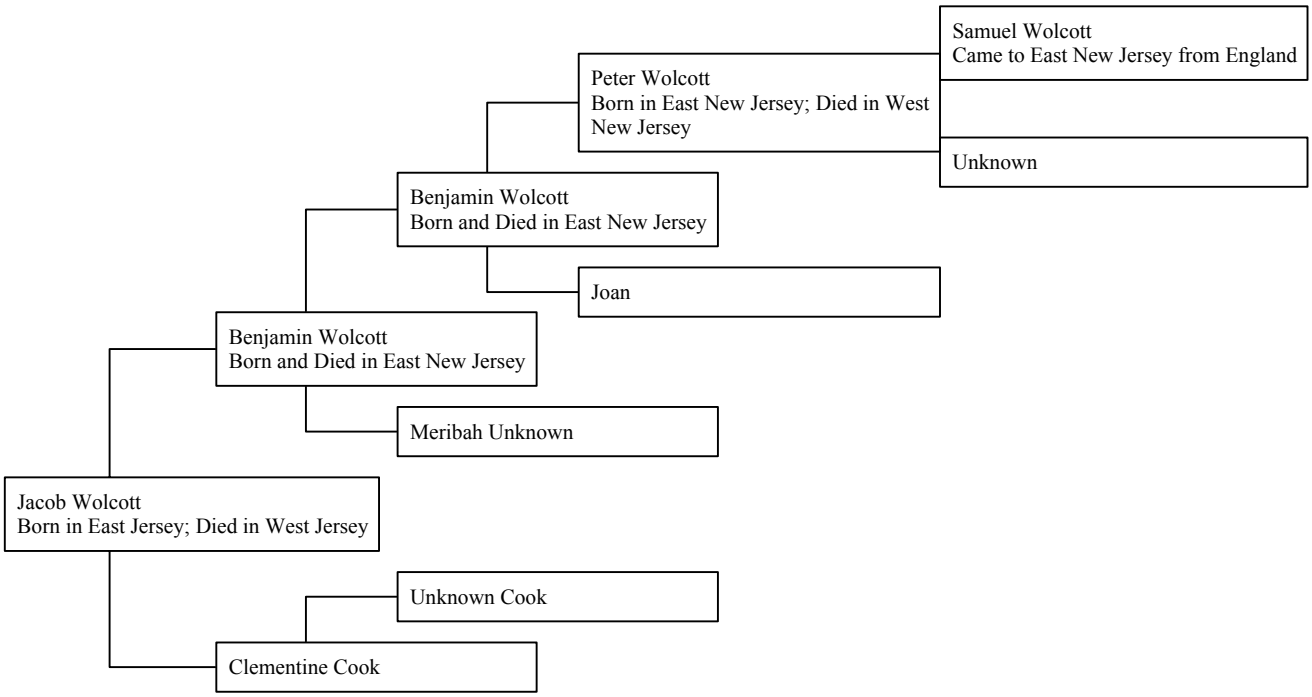
By about 1685, there was a very large collection of our ancestors living in East Jersey. There were at least 19 of our ancestors' family names living there. All of them had moved to East Jersey in this short time period from 1664 to 1685, from Long Island, Staten Island, and Westchester, New York; from Plymouth Colony and the Massachusetts Bay area; and from New Haven, Connecticut. It is likely that only one or two of them came directly from Europe. They were the ancestors of the male Frazee line, but also of the ancestors of Moses R. Frazee's great grandmother Susanna Winans, including the Winans, Mills, and Palmer families. And there were ancestors of Moses R. Frazee's mother, Rebecca Wolcott, including the Wolcott, Robbins, Sickles, Fitz Randolph, Bloomfield, Dennis, Seabrook and Grover families. This small area of East Jersey, which is now a part of the New York City metropolitan area, was the hotbed of Moses R. Frazee's family, like Eastham, Massachusetts was the hotbed of Mary Smith's family.

Following are genealogy charts showing some of Moses R. Frazee's ancestors in East New Jersey.

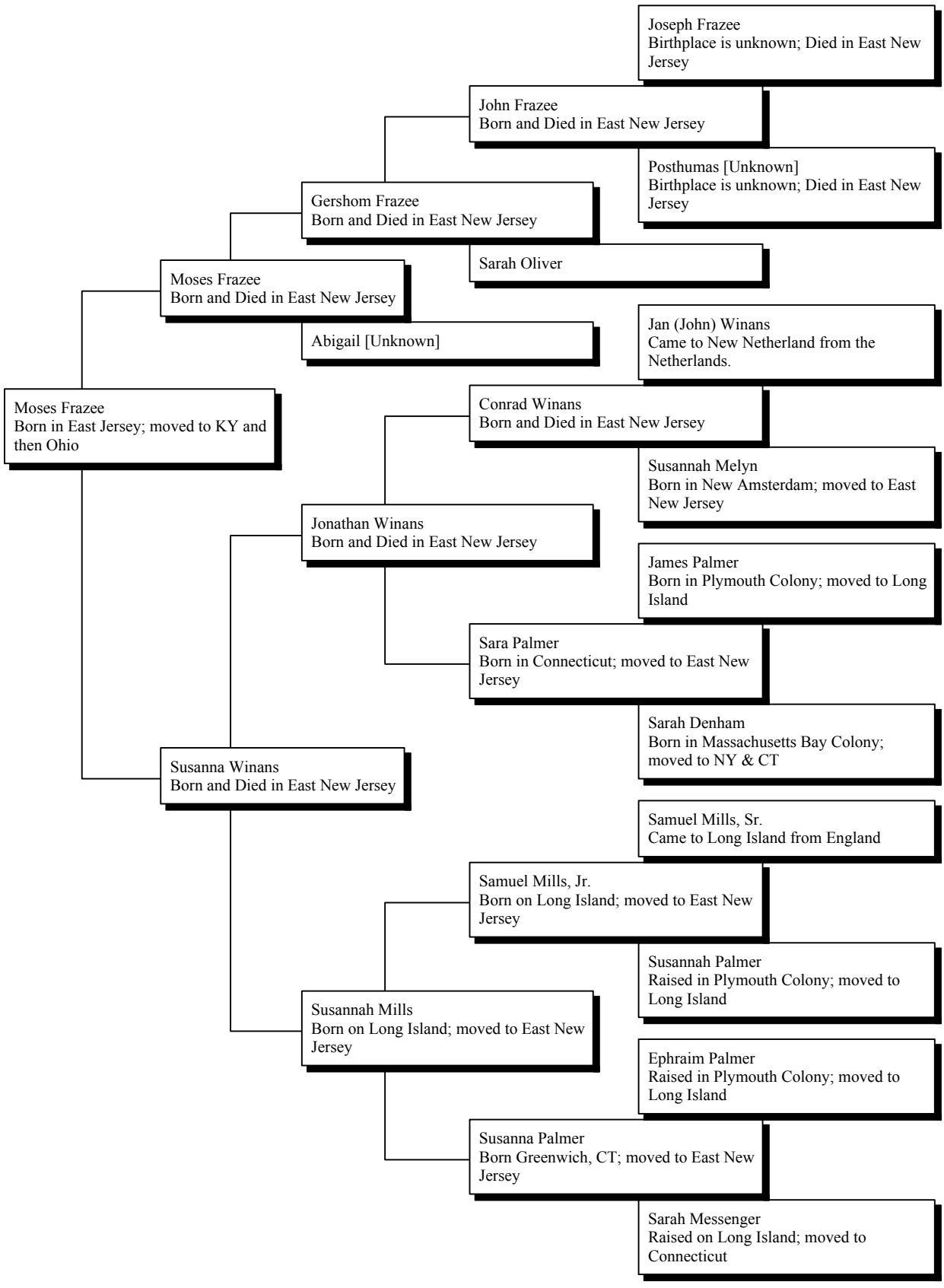
Some of Moses R. Frazee's Ancestors in New Jersey



Some more of Moses R. Frazee's Ancestors in New Jersey



Some More of Moses R. Frazee's Ancestors in East Jersey



Elizabethtown

Under Carteret's direction, the efforts to populate the Elizabethtown tract were very successful. The first town, named Elizabethtown, had 66 residents by early 1666, according to the records of the Oath of Allegiance that settlers took at that time. Most of these initial settlers were from Long Island. Later settlers to Elizabethtown would include Dutch, French and English transplants from neighboring Staten Island. Many of the early Dutch settlers of Staten Island intermarried with the early residents of Elizabeth and Woodbridge, New Jersey. The French settlers on Staten Island were Huguenots, the persecuted Protestants of France. When Philip Carteret arrived in New Jersey, the ship's passengers included several Huguenot indentured servants. Within a few years, other Huguenot settlers established a strong presence in Staten Island. Many French families migrated from New York to New Jersey, with the French intermixing with the early New Jersey settlers. Our ancestors include at least one family of French Huguenots.

The Winans Families

Jan Winans, ancestor of Moses R. Frazee, who had married **Susannah Melyn** in 1664, (see Chapter 6) was among the first New England and New York families who founded Elizabethtown, New Jersey in 1665. His name appeared on a list of those who took the Oath of Fidelity and Allegiance to the new town in 1665. Also on the list was his brother-in-law, Jacob Melyn. The founders of Elizabethtown received a warrant from the newly appointed Governor, Richard Nicholls, and acquired title to the land by purchase from the natives. Elizabeth is located just across the river from Staten Island.

It appears from records that Jan's wife Susannah and their children continued to live in New Haven for a few years, where their daughter Susanna was born in 1667, and then they relocated to New York City, where their son John was baptized in 1674. It appears that he moved his wife and children to Elizabethtown shortly after 1674. Records show that Jan Winans' children were baptized in the Dutch Church, but Jan later became active in a new church in Elizabethtown, which called itself "Independent", which generally meant that the church was not affiliated with any of the national churches, such as the Anglican or the Dutch church, and was not a Puritan church.

Records state that Jan was a weaver, but he also owned a substantial amount of land. At his death he had some 200 acres of land in Elizabethtown, 16 acres on the "Neck", 120 acres on Peach Meadow Brook, 40 acres on Elizabeth Creek, and at least 10 acres in other places. When his brother-in-law Jacob Melyn returned to New York in 1677, Jan Winans bought his house-lot, house, barn, orchard and other property.

Jan and Susannah had nine children born between 1665 and 1684. Their seventh child was **Conrad Winans,** born in Elizabethtown in 1678. Jan died in December 1694 in Elizabethtown.

Conrad Winans grew up in Elizabeth and married **Sara Palmer**, daughter of James Palmer and Sarah Denham, in Elizabethtown, New Jersey in about 1709. She was the granddaughter of Lt. William Palmer and Judith Feake Palmer, who we first encountered in Plymouth Colony and again on Long Island. Conrad and Sara's children included son **Jonathan Winans**, born July 15, 1710 in Elizabethtown. Conrad died in 1728 at the age of 48. His wife Sara died in 1732 at the age of 47.

As noted in the previous chapter, **Samuel Mills, Jr**. was born in Jamaica, Long Island in 1670, the son of Samuel Mills and Susannah Palmer. There he married his first cousin**, Susanna Palmer**, in 1693. Susanna was the daughter of Ephraim Palmer and Sarah Messenger, who had lived on Long Island and Greenwich, Connecticut, and the granddaughter of Lt. William Palmer and Judith Feake Palmer. Samual Mills, Jr. and **Susanna Palmer** were not one of the early settlers of Elizabethtown, but moved there in about 1695. Samuel and Susanna's children included **Susannah Mills**, born February 14, 1708. Samuel, Jr. died in 1744 in Elizabethtown at age 74.

Susannah Mills grew up in Elizabethtown and married her second cousin, **Jonathan Winans**, on May 4, 1731, in Short Hills, New Jersey (just a few miles from Elizabeth). They were both great-grandchildren of Lt. William Palmer and Judith Feake Palmer. Jonathan and Susannah's children included **Susanna Winans**, born March 9, 1734. Susannah Mills Winans died in 1774 in Rahway, New Jersey. Jonathan Winans died a few months later, in 1774, at the age of 63.

Their daughter **Susanna Winans** married **Moses (I) Frazee** in about 1755, and we will meet them again in a later chapter.

The Frazee Families

Joseph Frazey (ancestor of Moses R. Frazee) also was listed as one of the founders of Elizabethtown in 1665, along with Jan Winans and Jacob Melyn. He signed the "Oath of Aleagance and Fidelty" on February 19, 1665. His name is spelled several different ways in various documents, including Frazey, Frazee, Ffrazey, Phrazey, Phrasie, Fraize, Fraizie, Frayse, Fraze, Frasee, Fraysey, Freasey, and Fraizee. The most common spelling in the official records is Frazey. These varied spellings probably resulted from the lack of written personal identification, so clerks doing the records simply made up their own phonetic spelling of the name given to them orally. Some researchers have suggested that the name may have been Frazier at some time, but it seems clear from these documents that all had the same pronounciation, with no letter "r" at the end.

Some researchers claim that he had a middle name of "Ephraim", but I have not seen any evidence to support this. None of the documents showing his name give a middle name.

I have not found records which show when or where Joseph was born or his European origins. It has been estimated by researchers that he was born in about 1635. But there is no consensus about the place of birth. Some researchers speculate

that Joseph was born in England, others say Netherlands, some say France, others say Scotland, at least one says Northern Ireland, and several say he was born in America, probably of English parents. But I have not found any documentation that proves any of these. It is possible that he was born in America if his parents came to New England or New Netherland as part of the Great Migration from England in the 1630s. As noted above, many of the early settlers of Elizabethtown were English from Long Island and Connecticut, rather than immigrants directly from Britain, so there is a good probability that he moved to Elizabethtown from Long Island or Connecticut and was of English ancestry. There is a moderate probability that he was Dutch. He may have been born in New Netherland as a child of early Dutch settlers. Or he may have come from the Netherlands as an adult with the larger number of settlers from there in the 1650s and early 1660s. Records show that he associated with Dutch settlers, including Jan Winans. I have not seen any evidence that there were immigrants from Ireland into this area during this time period.

Some experts on the origins of names assert that the Frazee name came from France, from the names Fraisse and Fraysseix. French Huguenots by those names were in The Netherlands in the 1600s. Joseph Frazey or his family may have been one of the French Huguenot settlers on Staten Island who moved across the river to Elizabethtown.

It is much less likely that he was of Scottish origin, because the large influx of Scottish into the Elizabethtown area did not occur until almost 20 years after Joseph settled in Elizabethtown. It is unlikely that he was one of the Scottish prisoners brought to New England; it is doubtful that an "underclass" Scot would have been asked to join the founders of Elizabethtown.

Some researchers have stated that Joseph was a member of the Presbyterian church and therefore he probably was from Scotland, but I have not found any evidence to support this, and substantial evidence against. There were no established Presbyterian churches in America until the early 1700s, when the first one was established in Philadelphia, and there are no records of a Presbyterian Church in the Elizabethtown area in the 1600s. Some early settlers of East New Jersey, including John Frazee, son of Joseph, are buried in what are now Presbyterian cemeteries, but the Presbyterian churches were built many years after the burial. John Frazee, who died in 1724, is buried in what is now called the Rahway Presbyterian Church cemetery, but the first Presbyterian Church was not built there until 1741. It appears that an existing small cemetery or family burial plot was incorporated into the church cemetery when the church was built. And in any case, being a Presbyterian does not mean that the person must have come from Scotland. In the 1600s there were many congregations in England that promoted Presbyterianism.

Unless Joseph Frazee's name or his father's name is found on ship records or in an earlier settlement somewhere, this mystery may never be solved.

Joseph was married at least twice (some researchers show three marriages), and had at least 14 children with two wives. He was first married in about 1663. The name of this first wife is in dispute, but some researchers claim that her last name was Posthumus, which is a fairly common name in the Netherlands. Some believe that

Posthumus or Posthumas or Posthume was her given name; it was an accepted practice in England at the time to name a child Posthumus or Posthumas if they were born after the death of their father. In any case, there seems to be no record of his wife's full name or the names of her parents. Joseph and his first wife had at least nine children, including eight sons. One of these eight sons was our ancestor, and there is now general consensus that it was **John Frazee**, born in January 1674, to his first wife, Posthumus.

Joseph Frazey's first wife died in August 1681. In 1693 Joseph married a much younger woman, named Mary Osborne. She was born about 1665, and was a year or two younger than Joseph's oldest son by his first marriage. Joseph and Mary had five children, including two sons, during the period of 1694 - 1700. So Joseph had a total of ten sons, and it appears that all lived to adulthood. These sons produced a large number of Frazees / Frazeys by the fourth generation, and many of them had the same given names, such as Joseph, Gershom, Moses, James, Timothy and William, and most of them continued to live in the Elizabethtown area or close by, which created a nightmare for future genealogists who were trying to sort out the various families and generations. Descendants of Joseph have spread throughout the United States and Canada.

The records of Elizabethtown show that Joseph Frazee acquired over 400 acres of land in various acquisitions between 1665 and 1685. In 1676 a deed was issued for 120 acres to Joseph Frazee, next to David Ogden and William Letts. In 1676, a list of grants at Elizabeth Town included Joseph Frazey (6 ac. houselot). In 1678, a deed was issued transferring from Luke Watson, to Joseph Frayse, 182 acres. In 1679 an inventory of the estate of Henry Jacques was made by Joseph Frazey. In 1682, there was a deed of property from William Broadwell, cordwainer (shoemaker), to Joseph Frazey, for 130 acres on E-N-E of Rawack River. His occupation was listed as "yeoman", which meant a farmer who worked his own land.

Joseph died in 1713, and his last will named seven of his sons, and mentioned his daughters but not by name.

John Frazee, son of Joseph Frazee and Posthumus, was born January 9, 1674, and died January 30, 1723. He married twice, first to Elizabeth Cooper in about 1698, and second to **Sarah Oliver** in about 1708. John had a total of nine children with the two wives, but it is not entirely clear which wife had which children. His children were Susannah, Phoebe, John, Stephen, **Gershom,** Benoni, William, Timothy and Jonathan. It appears from available evidence that Gershom was the son of Sarah Oliver. It is estimated that **Gershom** was born in about 1710. I have not found any records that specifically link Gershom to John, but there are records showing he was a brother of other of John's children. I do not have reliable information on the life of Sarah Oliver, the wife of John Frazee. Some researchers have speculated that she was the daughter of Samuel Oliver and Mary Higgins, and that Mary Higgins was the daughter of Richard Higgins who had lived in Plymouth Colony and then moved to East New Jersey, but I have not found proof that she was the daughter of Samuel Oliver, and she clearly was not the granddaughter of Richard Higgins. The proven daughter of Richard Higgins named Mary was never married to a Samuel Oliver..

Gershom Frazee was born in Elizabethtown and lived there his entire life. He was married to **Abigail (Unknown)** in Elizabethtown; I have not identified the last name of his wife. There is speculation that her last name was Bassett, but I have not found good evidence of that. But we do know that they produced at least four children: Abraham, Gershom, Jr., **Moses**, and Matthias. **Moses Frazee** was born about 1731 in Elizabethtown, New Jersey. Note: to minimize confusion among the three Moses Frazees who were ancestors, I will refer to this first Moses as Moses (I). The records state that Gershom worked as a weaver. He died in 1754 and is buried in the cemetery of the First Presbyterian Church, Elizabeth, New Jersey.

It should be noted here that the fact that Gershom was buried in a Presbyterian Church cemetery is not the basis for concluding that his father or grandfather were Presbyterians. Historians have noted that many of the early settlers in the area chose their church affiliation based on convenience or social considerations, rather than any strong religious beliefs.

In his Last Will, of February, 1754, Gershom gave to his son **Moses** "part of my Plantation Forty Rods wide on the North East side of said Plantation Together with the Dwelling Houses on the Said Plantation." He gave to his son Abraham the remainder of his plantation with the condition that he give each of his brothers, Gershom and Mathias, ten acres apiece when they come of age. Moses and Abraham were charged with paying all of his debts. His wife Abigail received all the "Household Goods and Moveables within Doors and without."

Moses (I) Frazee, son of Gershom, grew up in Elizabethtown and married **Susanna Winans** (see above) in about 1755.

Woodbridge & Piscataway, and Middletown & Shrewsbury

In May, 1666, the Long Islanders and Carteret sold the southern half of their Elizabethtown patent to representatives from Newbury (also called Newburyport), Massachusetts, who founded the town of Woodbridge (New Jersey). The town was named for the Newbury minister - Rev. John Woodbridge. Most of the early Woodbridge settlers were from Newbury and neighboring Haverhill, Massachusetts. Woodbridge home lots were 10 to 20 acres in size, and each purchaser was entitled to receive 60 acres of upland and 6 acres of meadow.

In December, 1666, the early Woodbridge Associates sold one-third of the Woodbridge lands to a second group of persons from Massachusetts, creating the town of Piscataway. The Piscataway settlers came from a variety of small towns above and below Boston, including Plymouth Colony towns on Cape Cod.

Two additional towns had been established on the lands of Nicolls' original Monmouth patent - Middletown and Shrewsbury. Middletown was populated primarily by Baptists from Rhode Island and Long Island, and Shrewsbury by Quakers from Long Island. Both groups were attracted by the promise of religious freedom. Middletown is about 15 miles south of Staten Island, and about 25 miles south of Elizabethtown.

In these four communities just to the south of Elizabethtown, there were at least fourteen families who are ancestors of Moses R. Frazee's mother, Rebecca Wolcott.

The Fitz Randolph Families

Edward Fitz Randolph and his wife **Elizabeth Blossom**, moved from Barnstable, Plymouth Colony (see Chapter 5) in 1669. Edward headed a group of settlers in Cape Cod who moved to Piscataway to get away from the religion-dominated governments in New England. Their children who moved with them included **Benjamin Fitz Randolph** who was six years old at the time. Edward was a yeoman farmer in Piscataway. He died in about 1684 in Piscataway. His wife Elizabeth died in 1713, at the age of 93.

Benjamin Fitz Randolph grew up in Piscataway. He married **Sarah Dennis**, daughter of John Dennis and Sarah Bloomfield (see below) in 1689, in Woodbridge. They had a son named **Isaac Fitz Randolph**, born April 10, 1701. Benjamin was a farmer like his father before him.

Several members of the Fitz Randolph families in Piscataway and Woodbridge became major supporters of the Quakers. Benjamin's brother, Nathaniel Fitz Randolph, was a primary mover in building a Quaker meeting house. It is not known whether the Benjamin Fitz Randolph family members were Quakers.

Robert Dennis and his wife had moved from Yarmouth, Plymouth Colony, to Woodbridge in late 1666 or early 1667, along with several other families from Cape Cod who were tiring of the oppressive rules of the Separatists in the Colony. Their son John Dennis, who was about 23 years old at the time, also moved with them. Robert Dennis died in Woodbridge in 1697 at the age of 80.

Robert's son **John Dennis** was a farmer like his father. In December 1668 he married **Sarah Bloomfield**, daughter of Thomas Bloomfield and his wife, also of Woodbridge. John and Sarah Dennis had a daughter named **Sarah Dennis**, born in July, 1673.

Thomas Bloomfield and his family moved from Newbury, Massachusetts Bay Colony, to Woodbridge in 1666. As with most of the settlers in the area, Thomas was a yeoman farmer. He died in Woodbridge in June 1684.

His daughter **Sarah Bloomfield**, who was 23 years old at the time, moved with the family from Newbury to Woodbridge. Two years later, in December 1668, she married **John Dennis.** Their children included **Sarah Dennis.**

James Grover sold his farm in Gravesend, Long Island in 1667, and he and his wife **Rebecca Cheeseman** and at least five children moved to the settlement of Middletown, in what is now Monmouth County. In December 1667, Grover was assigned a lot in the town and the next year was named the first Town Clerk of Middletown. In 1668 he was one of the founders of the Baptist Church at Middletown. In 1669 he reached agreement with the town for the operation of his

flour mill. In the 1670s he developed the first iron works in New Jersey, near Shrewsbury, a few miles south of Middletown (more on this below). In June 1672 he was granted a commission as a Lieutenant in the Middletown militia. In 1675 he was named an Associate of the County Court of Middletown and Shrewsbury. Also in 1675 he was granted a total of over 500 acres of land in Middletown by Governor Carteret. Records show another grant of land of 517 acres in Middletown to Grover in 1677. He also was appointed Justice of the Peace at a court in Shrewsbury, in 1677. James died in Middletown in December of 1685.

James Grover had discovered bog-iron on his property and began preparation to construct an iron works. In order to assist in financing this project, Grover mortgaged the property to Cornelius Steenwyck of New York. In 1675, when Grover ran out of capital, he sold one-half interest of the Works to Colonel Lewis Morris of Morrisiana, New York. Morris later took over Steenwyck's mortgage and thus retained a three quarter interest in the Works. Col. Morris, who had been sent to Barbados by Oliver Cromwell in 1654 to command the British forces, amassed a fortune there and returned to New York in 1673 to assume guardianship of his infant nephew, Lewis Morris (1671-1746). In addition to his holdings in the Tinton Falls Iron Works, Col. Morris had a sugar plantation in the West Indies and large shipping interests in New York. At its peak, Tinton Manor and the iron works contained nearly 6,000 acres. The facilities on the property included the forge, blast furnace, the manor house, separate dwellings for black and white workmen, and gristmills.

When Col. Morris died in 1691 at his estate in Morrisiana, NY, he left the iron works, the Tinton Manor estate, and other property to his nephew, Lewis Morris. This Lewis Morris continued operation of the iron works, but was more interested in pursuing a career in politics. He attained the office of county justice of the peace in 1687, and Supreme Court Justice of Monmouth County in 1692. In 1738, he was appointed Governor of New Jersey and served in that capacity until his death in 1746. Morris County and Morristown, New Jersey are named for this Morris (no known relation to our ancestors named Morris). It is not known whether James Grover gained any financial benefit from his 25% interest in the iron works developed on his property.

James Grover's son **Joseph Grover** had come to Middletown with his parents in 1667. He met and married **Hannah Lawrence**, daughter of **William and Elizabeth Lawrence**, who also had recently moved to Middletown (see below). Joseph and Hannah's children included **Hannah Grover**, born in 1684. Joseph died in 1689, at only 38 years of age. After Joseph's death, Hannah remarried in 1694. She died in about 1704.

William Lawrence and his wife Elizabeth Scudder had come from Hertfordshire, England to New Netherland. They first settled in Newton, Long Island, and moved to Middletown in about 1667. William was a deputy to the first Legislative Assembly in New Jersey in 1669. William and Elizabeth had at least seven children, all boys except for **Hannah Lawrence**, born in Hertfordshire, England in about 1657. Hannah married Joseph Grover (see above).

James Seabrook, who was born about 1673 in Westchester, New York, came to the Middletown area in about 1676 with his mother Mary after his father was killed by natives (see previous chapter). He grew up in the Monmouth area and married **Hannah Grover** in about 1703.

Joseph Grover and Hannah Lawrence's daughter **Hannah Grover** married **James Seabrook** who also now lived in Middletown. They had a daughter, **Rebecca Seabrook**, born in 1708, who married **Isaac Fitz Randolph**, from neighboring Piscataway.

Isaac Fitz Randolph married **Rebecca Seabrook**, daughter of James Seabrook and Hannah Grover, from nearby Middletown, on November 28, 1728. Their children included **Rhoda Fitz Randolph**, born in 1734 in the Woodbridge area. Isaac Fitz Randolph died in 1758, in Princeton, New Jersey. His wife Rebecca had died in Princeton in 1744.

The Robbins Families

Daniel Robbins and his wife **Hope Potter** settled in Monmouth County in about 1669, having moved from New Haven, Connecticut (see previous Chapter). They had escaped the "Christian Utopia" of New Haven. They had eleven children, including **Moses Robbins**, born March 27, 1679 in Woodbridge. He was the seventh child of Daniel and Hope. Daniel Robbins died August 18, 1714 in Woodbridge, and is buried at the Robbins family farm at Freehold, New Jersey. The records state that he was a Quaker. In his Last Will he describes himself as a yeoman. Hope Potter Robbins died in 1687.

Moses Robbins married **Mary Sickles** in about 1704 in Woodbridge. I have not found proof of her parents' identity, but there is some evidence that her grandparents may have been immigrants from the Netherlands; there were Dutch families by the name of Sickles or Sickels in East New Jersey at the time. Moses and Mary Robbins' children included **Zacharich Robbins** who was born in 1704 or 1705.

Zachariah Robbins was the grandson of the Scottish prisoner-of-war, Daniel Robins. The Robbins family had initially settled in Middletown, Monmouth County, but later moved a bit northwest to Woodbridge. Zachariah grew up in East New Jersey, and married **Mary Branson**. Mary was the daughter of **Thomas Branson** and **Elizabeth Day**, a Quaker family from Burlington County, in West New Jersey. Zachariah and Mary Robbins' children included **Moses Robins**, born September 1729 in the Woodbridge area. It is likely that the Robins family participated in the Quaker Church, because Mary grew up in a Quaker family, and their granddaughter Rebecca married a Quaker.

Moses Robins married **Rhoda Fitz Randolph** (see above). Their children included **Rebecca Robins**, born October 19, 1759. Moses Robbins died in Woodbridge in 1794, and Rhoda died in 1798. Their daughter **Rebecca** married **Jacob Wolcott** from nearby Shrewsbury (see below).

The Wolcott Families

Samuel Wolcott settled in Shewsbury in about 1667. He was born in 1630 in Plymouth, Devon, England. He came to America in 1660 as an indentured servant of John Templeton, a mariner. The servitude was to cover the cost of the passage to America. Most indentures for passage to America were for four years, at the conclusion of which Samuel would have been at liberty to settle wherever he wished. Records show a warrant for survey of lands in East Jersey in 1667 that included the name of Samuel Wolcott, and later land grant documents show his name as a land owner near Shrewsbury. I do not have information on his wife, but his children included **Peter Wolcott.** Samuel died in 1687, in Tinton Falls, the town developed near James Grover's iron works. His Will requested his Executors to "take care that my sone, Nathaniell, be no ways wronged by his master, Joseph Grover." Apparently Nathaniel was an indentured servant of ancestor Joseph Grover.

Peter Wolcott was born in about 1665, probably in Shrewsbury. Peter grew up in Shrewsbury and married Joan (Unknown) from Shrewsbury. They had a son named **Benjamin Wolcott**, born March 20, 1687 in Monmouth. Records indicate that Peter Wolcott became a Quaker, and that he moved to Burlington County in West New Jersey some time after his son Benjamin was born.

Benjamin Wolcott was born July 18, 1724, son of Benjamin and Meribah Wolcott. He married Clementine Cook in 1750 (I have no further information about Clementine Cook). Benjamin's first wife, Rachel, died after only a year of marriage. Benjamin was a Quaker and was active in the Friends Meetings. He worked as a weaver and a school teacher. They lived in Shrewsbury, New Jersey, where they raised their children Peter, Jacob, Benjamin, Elizabeth, Henry, Meribah, and Amos. Son **Jacob** was born February 7, 1755. Benjamin died in 1790 in Shrewsbury. In his Will, he left his house and weaving equipment to his widow, Clemy, and his land, etc., to his children.

Jacob Wolcott grew up in Shrewsbury, and married **Rebecca Robins**, in about 1779. It appears that he and Rebecca moved to Mansfield, New Jersey, in Burlington County, after their marriage.

Separation of New Jersey into East and West Jersey

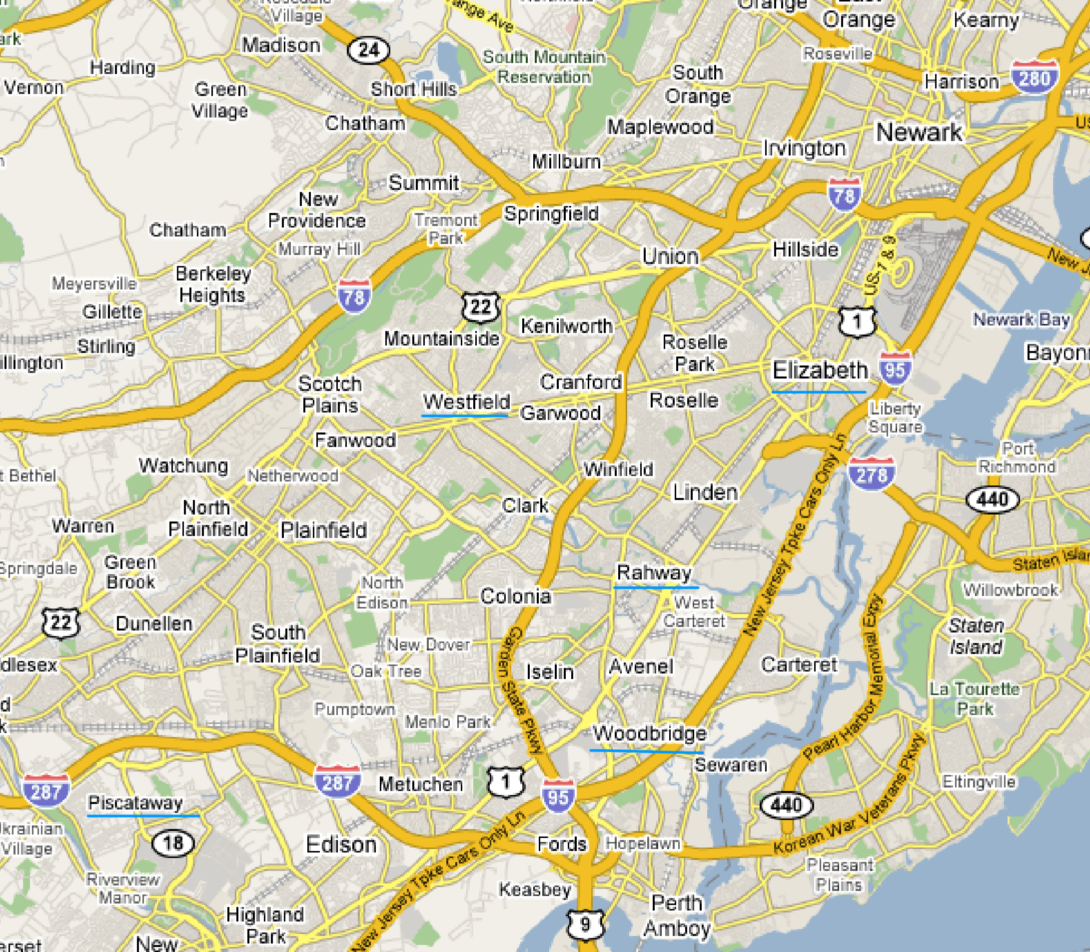
In 1676, New Jersey was divided into East and West Jersey, as a result of decisions by the Proprietors back in England. The Quakers had been seeking more land in America because of persecution in England, and the principal Proprietor of New Jersey was in dire need of funds, so he sold his one-half interest in New Jersey to a Quaker. A deed was signed in 1676, by Quakers Edward Byllynge and William Penn, that gave them the western half of New Jersey, running from Little Egg Harbor in the south to the northwestern point of New Jersey. This left Elizabethtown, Woodbridge, Picataway and Monmouth in East Jersey under Governor Carteret.

The Quakers quickly negotiated with the native Americans to acquire land in West Jersey and established Burlington and Trenton. The next Chapter will discuss our ancestors who settled in the Quaker West Jersey and Pennsylvania.

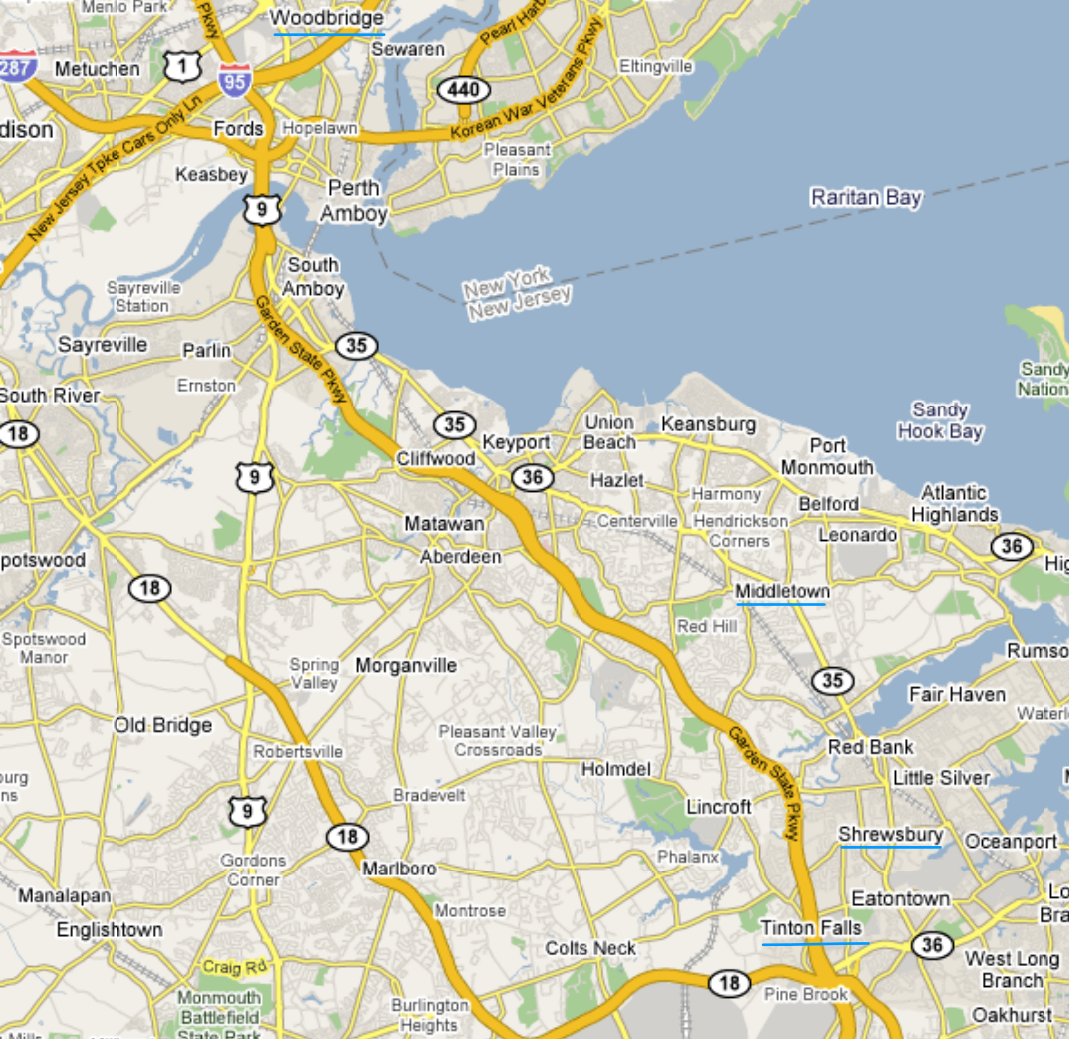
Maps of East New Jersey

The two maps on the following pages show the area settled by our ancestors in east New Jersey. The first map shows the area of Elizabethtown, with the original town, called "Elizabeth" on this map. The map also shows Westfield, to the west of Elizabeth; the settlement of Woodbridge to the south of Elizabeth; and the settlement of Piscataway to the southwest of Elizabeth.

The second map shows the approximate area of the Monmouth settlements, including the towns of Middletown, Shrewsbury, and Tinton Falls. Note that it is only a short distance south of Woodbridge and the other Elizabethtown settlements.



Madison
Harding
Vernon
Green Village
Short Hills
South Mountain Reservation
Chatham
Orange
Kearny
Roseville
South Orange
Harrison
Maplewood
Newark
Irvington
Millburn
Summit
New Providence
Chatham
Tremont Park
Springfield
Murray Hill
Union
Hillside
Meyersville
Berkeley Heights
Gillette
Stirling
Mountainside
Kenilworth
Roselle Park
Newark Bay
Elizabeth
Bayonne
Scotch Plains
Westfield
Cranford
Garwood
Roselle
Liberty Square
Fanwood
Watchung
Netherwood
Winfield
Linden
Port Richmond
Warren
North Plainfield
Plainfield
Clark
Springdale
Green Brook
North Edison
Colonia
Rahway
West Carteret
Willowbrook
Dunellen
South Plainfield
New Dover
Oak Tree
Iselin
Avenel
Carteret
Staten Island
La Tourette Park
Pumptown
Menlo Park
Woodbridge
Sewaren
Metuchen
Eltingville
Piscataway
Edison
Fords
Hopelawn
Ukrainian Village
Riverview Manor
Keasbey
Perth Amboy
Pleasant Plains
Highland Park
New
Garden State Pkwy
New Jersey Tpke Cars Only Ln
Pearl Harbor Memorial Expy
Korean War Veterans Pkwy
Staten Island
US-1 & 9
24
22
78
280
95
278
440
287
18
1
9


Menlo Park
Woodbridge
Sewaren
Pearl Harbor Memorial Pkwy
Metuchen
1
95
287
440
Eltingville
Korean War Veterans Pkwy
Fords
Hopelawn
New Jersey Tpke Cars Only Ln
Pleasant Plains
Keasbey
Perth Amboy
9
Raritan Bay
South Amboy
New York
New Jersey
Sayreville Station
Garden State Pkwy
Sayreville
Parlin
35
Ernston
South River
18
Keyport
Union Beach
Keansburg
Sandy Hook Bay
Port Monmouth
Cliffwood
36
Hazlet
Harmony
Belford
Atlantic Highlands
Centerville
Hendrickson Corners
Leonardo
Matawan
Aberdeen
Middletown
Red Hill
Spotswood Manor
Spring Valley
Morganville
Fair Haven
Old Bridge
Pleasant Valley
Crossroads
Robertsville
Holmdel
Red Bank
Little Silver
Bradevelt
Lincroft
Shrewsbury
Oceanport
Gordons Corner
Marlboro
Phalanx
Manalapan
Montrose
Eatontown
Englishtown
Tinton Falls
Colts Neck
West Long Branch
Craig Rd
Monmouth Battlefield State Park
Burlington Heights
Pine Brook
Oakhurst

Chapter 9: Settlements in West Jersey and Eastern Pennsylvania

West Jersey

The new Proprietors of West Jersey purchased roughly thirty miles of Delaware River waterfront land in 1676 from the Lenape Native Americans, and the county of Burlington was founded on part of that land by settlers, primarily Quakers, in 1677. According to a recognized history of New Jersey, in exchange for this enormous piece of real estate, the natives were paid: 30 match-coats, 20 guns, 30 kettles, one great kettle, 30 pair of hose, 20 fathoms of duffels, 30 petticoats, 30 narrow hoes, 30 bars of lead, 15 small barrels of powder, 70 knives, 30 Indian axes, 70 combs, 60 pair of tobacco tongs, 60 tinshaw looking-glasses, 120 awl-blades, 120 fish-hooks, two grasps of red paint, 120 needles, 60 tobacco boxes, 120 pipes, 200 bells, 100 Jews-harps, and six anchors of rum.

The first group of settlers numbered two hundred and thirty people, who sailed up the Delaware and founded Burlington. Within two years, several hundred more had made their homes in the vicinity.

With the establishment of Burlington, there existed two very different forms of government in what is now New Jersey. In East Jersey, the influence of the Puritans who had moved there from New England was sufficient to carry on many of the Puritans' long list of crimes against God or nature. East Jersey had a list of thirteen crimes for which the penalty was death. In West Jersey, however, the Quakers' laws established by William Penn were a model of enlightenment, even by the standards of the 21st century, and made no mention of a death penalty.

A description of the settlements in West Jersey by the Quakers, which probably is more than a little exaggerated, is worth quoting:

"Colonists arrived in considerable numbers, good order and harmony prevailed, the country proved to be productive, the air was salubrious, and the Indians, being treated kindly and dealt with justly, were found to be excellent neighbors. The Friends (Quakers), who had been persecuted with relentless severity in their native land, found a peaceful and happy asylum in the forests of the new world, among a people who had hitherto been reputed as ruthless savages. In the same province, ten years before, the "concessions" of Carteret and Berkeley required each colonist to provide himself with a good musket, powder and balls; but now, the Friends came among their red brethren, armed only with the weapons of the Christian's warfare, integrity, benevolence, and truth; they met them without fear or suspicion; trusting in that universal principle of light and life which visits all minds, and would, if not resisted, bind the whole human family in one harmonious fraternity."

It is interesting that one of the early actions taken by the Quakers in their relations with the natives was to try to put an end to selling liquor to the natives, who had no experience with liquor prior to the coming of Europeans. Not only were the natives inexperienced in using liquor in moderation, but they also had a very high susceptibility to alcoholism.

Pennsylvania

Shortly after establishing West Jersey, William Penn turned his attention to a larger tract of land on the west banks of the Delaware River, which the Duke of York considered to be under his control. In 1681, in payment of a royal debt, William Penn was granted proprietary rights to almost the whole of what is now Pennsylvania, the name of which comes from Penn's Sylvan (Forest).

Being a devout Quaker, Penn viewed his colony as a holy experiment, designed to grant asylum to the persecuted under conditions of equality and freedom. In 1681 he sent his deputy to establish a government at Chester and sent commissioners to plot the City of Brotherly Love (Philadelphia), which was laid out a few miles north of the confluence of the Delaware and the Schuylkill rivers.

Penn also prepared a constitution, known as the Frame of Government, that gave Pennsylvania the most liberal government in the colonies. Religious freedom was guaranteed to all who believed in God, a humane penal code was adopted, and the emancipation of slaves was encouraged. When Penn himself arrived in 1682, he met with the chiefs of the Delaware tribes and a treaty was signed that promoted long-lasting goodwill between the Native Americans and the European settlers and avoided most of the difficulties that the Dutch had created with the natives in New Netherland.

Penn promoted migration to his colony to persecuted religious sects throughout Europe, including the Quakers in Britain, the Protestants in France, and the Mennonites in German states. In 1682, there was a large wave of immigrants arriving in Pennsylvania, including many Quakers, from the British Isles and Germany.

Over the next 30 years, Pennsylvania developed into the most successful colony at the time in America, enriched by the continuous immigration of numerous different nationalities into the area. The Quakers, (mainly English and Welsh) were concentrated in Philadelphia and the eastern counties, where they developed significant commercial and financial activities through foreign trade. The Germans (later called Pennsylvania Dutch), largely of persecuted religious sects of Mennonites (including Amish), Moravians, Lutherans, and Reformed, settled in the farming areas of southeast Pennsylvania, where they retained their cohesion and to a considerable extent their language and customs.

About Quakers

The Quaker religious sect was started by a fellow named George Fox, in England, who had rejected the rules and structure of the Church of England, and like the Puritans, believed that individuals could commune with God without going through the established church and its rulers. He believed that Christ could and would speak to people within their own heart. He called it the "Inner Light". He came to believe that the Inner Light was in everyone and if they worshipped God in silence they

would feel the Inner Light and God would speak to their hearts and they would understand the Word of God by the Inner Light.

The Quakers, under William Penn's guidance, established a number of principles and practices for their members, including:

Everyone is equal, including women and those of other races.
Deal fairly and honestly with others, and live peaceably with other people.
Never take part in war, except to care for the injured.
Live a simple lifestyle, without unnecessary "extras" in dress or home decorations, or religious observances.

Quakers held "meetings" rather than regular church services. They would sit in silence and wait for the sense of the Inner Light of God to move them. When they sensed this, they were allowed to speak forth what they are feeling. At times the entire meeting would be spent in silence.

Ancestors In West Jersey and Eastern Pennsylvania

Morris Ancestors

The Thatcher Family

Richard Thatcher, an ancestor of Harriet Ellen Morris, came to Pennsylvania in 1682, from Berkshire, England, with his wife **Dorothy Pray**, and several children. They were among the early Quaker immigrants to the new colony, and Richard purchased 1000 acres from William Penn in 1682. He was one of the first 15 purchasers of land in the new colony, and received two town lots in Philadelphia as a reward. The land he acquired was in what is now Bucks County, bordering the west side of the Delaware River, just north of Philadelphia. Today it is part of suburban Philadelphia (and that 1000 acres would be worth at least $50 million!).

Richard Thatcher and Dorothy brought with them to America at least four children, including **Bartholomew**, Richard, Jr., Joseph, and Amos.

Richard made a home on his land and began clearing some of the forest to permit farming, with the help of his eldest son Richard, Jr. Richard died in 1690 and his Last Will left 100 acres of cleared land to Richard, Jr., and the remainder was divided among his other three sons.

His son **Bartholomew Thatcher** was born in Berkshire, England, and was about 17 years old when he came to America with his parents and siblings. Over the next few years he and his brother Joseph learned the carpentry trade and made their living as carpenters. Bartholomew moved across the river to Burlington County, New Jersey, where he met his future wife, **Elizabeth (Unknown**). Bartholomew and his brother Joseph began selling off the Pennsylvania land they inherited from their father.
Bartholomew married Elizabeth in about 1702 in Burlington County. I have not found the maiden name of Elizabeth, but one record states she was born in 1684.

According to an article in the Philadelphia Gazette upon Elizabeth's death, she and Bartholomew had 17 children. And at the time of her death in 1771, she had 118 grandchildren, 133 great-grandchildren, and one great-great grandchild.

Bartholomew and Elizabeth's children included **Amos Thatcher**, born in about 1704 in Burlington County. Amos grew up in the Quaker community in Burlington County, and married **Lydia Prall** in 1726. **Lydia** was born in about 1704 (some researchers say 1706). I have not found any records showing the names of her parents, but it is quite certain that she was a descendant, probably a granddaughter, of Arendt Jansen Prall, the Dutch settler of Staten Island, discussed in Chapter Six. Members of the Prall Family Association have done extensive genealogy research regarding the descendants of Arendt Jansen Prall and believe that Lydia is a Prall and a descendant of Arendt Jansen Prall, but they have not found proof of her parents. She is not listed in any family wills or birth or christening records. However, there is no evidence of any other unrelated Prall families living in the area during this time period, and there were several members of this Prall family living there, so it is assumed she is part of this Prall family. It is speculated that she may have been an "illegitimate" or "out-of-wedlock" child of one of Arendt Jansen Prall's children. There were at least five offspring of Arendt who were of the age where they could have been the father or the mother of Lydia.

Amos Thatcher and Lydia Prall had at least ten children (some researchers say 15), including Joseph, Amos (who died as an infant), Lydia (who died as an infant), Mary (who lived to age 103), Bartholomew, Sarah, and **Lydia Amy**. Lydia Amy was born in 1739, in Huntingdon County, which had been split off from Burlington County, in West Jersey. Amos Thatcher died January 18, 1798 in Amwell Township, Hunterdon County, New Jersey, at about 94 years of age. His wife Lydia died in about 1787.

Lydia Amy Thatcher grew up in Amwell, Hunterdon County, Colony of New Jersey. In about 1758 she married **John Wilson**, who was born in 1739 in Amwell. **John Wilson** and **Lydia Amy Thatcher** had eleven children between 1759 and 1785: Daniel, Amy, George, Lydia, Mary, Amos, Eleanor, Nancy, Sarah, John and Abigail. Son **Amos Wilson**, was born in west New Jersey (Sussex County) on April 7, 1770.

John Wilson, wife Lydia Amy and their children began a series of moves west in about 1774, when Amos was about four years old. They first moved to Wyoming County, Pennsylvania, and then to Redstone County, in western Pennsylvania, and we will meet them again there.

The Wilson Families – Ancestors of Harriet Ellen Morris

John Wilson who married Lydia Amy Thatcher was the son of **John R. Wilson** who was born in the in Somerset County, New Jersey, in about 1712, and the family later moved to the adjoining Hunterdon County, West Jersey. He married Sarah York from Hunterdon County.

John R. Wilson's father was Richard Wilson, born about 1689.

The Owen Families From Wales - Ancestors of Harriet Ellen Morris

Thomas Owen was born in Carmarthenshire, Wales in about 1665. He married **Elizabeth (Unknown)** in about 1684, in Wales. Thomas and Elizabeth came to America in about 1685, as part of the great Quaker migration, and settled in Whiteland Township, Chester County, Pennsylvania (in eastern Pennsylvania). They had at least eight children: Richard, Owen, **Samuel**, Thomas, John, Mary, Elinor and Katherine. **Samuel Owen** was born in 1706, in Chester County, Pennsylvania. Thomas was a yeoman, working land in Chester County. Thomas died in 1720 in Chester County, and Elizabeth died in 1741.

The Owen family members were active Quakers; records indicate that they participated in the Chester Friends Meeting. The family name was spelled as Owen or Owens in different records. In later generations it was spelled as Owens.

Samuel Owen grew up in the Welsh community in Chester County and married **Sarah (Unknown** - probably a Welsh Quaker**)** in about 1730. They had at least five children: Ezekial, Hannah, **Sarah,** Owen and Samuel. **Sarah Owens** was born April 20, 1735. Samuel died in 1740 in Chester, at only 34 years of age.

The Owens settled in what was called the "Welsh Tract", which was a 40,000 acre tract set aside in Pennsylvania, northwest of Philadelphia, pursuant to an agreement between a group of leading Welsh families and William Penn. The early Welsh immigrants were mostly Quakers, and were persecuted in their home land for their religious principles. By acts of Parliament their public worship was forbidden on penalty of fines and imprisonment. A primary consideration influencing their determination to emigrate to Pennsylvania was the belief that, by purchasing a large tract of land and settling there as a group, they could maintain a community of their own in the New World and thereby perpetuate their distinctive language and institutions. Because many of the Welsh Quakers belonged to the gentry and were men of means, the accomplishment of this goal seemed feasible.

The Welsh Tract of 40,000 acres lay on the west side of the Schuylkill, north of Philadelphia. It was a fertile, attractive region of about sixty-two square miles, nicely suited to the requirements of the Welsh farmers. It included eleven and a half of the present townships in Montgomery, Chester, and Delaware Counties.

Settlement of the Welsh Tract proceeded rapidly. Between 1682 and 1700 the Welsh were the most numerous body of immigrants arriving in Pennsylvania. The early settlers included several families named Owen. This area of Pennsylvania is still sprinkled with Welsh place names, such as Gwynedd and Bala-Cynwyd.

Samuel Owens daughter **Sarah Owens** married **Owen Davis** in about 1753. **Owen Davis** was one of the new comers to America. He was born December 5, 1725 in Wales, the son of **Phillip Davis** and **Jane (Unknown).** He came to America in about 1751 as a young man and initially settled in eastern Pennsylvania, where he met and

married Sarah Owens in about 1753. Owen Davis and Sarah Owens would soon move on west, where we will meet them again.

The Morris Families - Ancestors of Harriet Ellen Morris

Joseph Morris was born in about 1722, probably in Burlington County, New Jersey where his presence is first recorded as a young man. I do not have reliable information about his parents. Some researchers claim he came from England as a young man, possibly as part of a Quaker migration, but I have found no evidence to support this. There were a large number of Morris families in New Jersey, New York and Pennsylvania by the late 1600s, mainly from England, so it is possible that Joseph was a son of one of those early immigrants. We do know that this Morris family was not a close relative to the Morris families who signed the Declaration of Independence and the United States Constitution, although they may have had a common ancestor at some time in Britain.

Joseph Morris married **Hannah Asson** in 1744, in Burlington County. Hannah, born in 1723, had grown up in Shrewsbury, East Jersey, in a Quaker family. Her parents were **William and Hannah Asson**, but I have no additional information about them. Joseph and Hannah had at least six children, including George, Joseph, Levi, Isiah, **Jonathan,** and Amos. The family moved from Burlington to what was then called Berkeley, Pennsylvania (or Virginia - it was on the border of the colonies - it is now part of West Virginia), in a place called Apple Pie Ridge. **Jonathan** was born there in about 1753. They later moved on to far western Pennsylvania, as discussed below.

Frazee Ancestors

Day & Branson Families - Ancestors of Moses R. Frazee

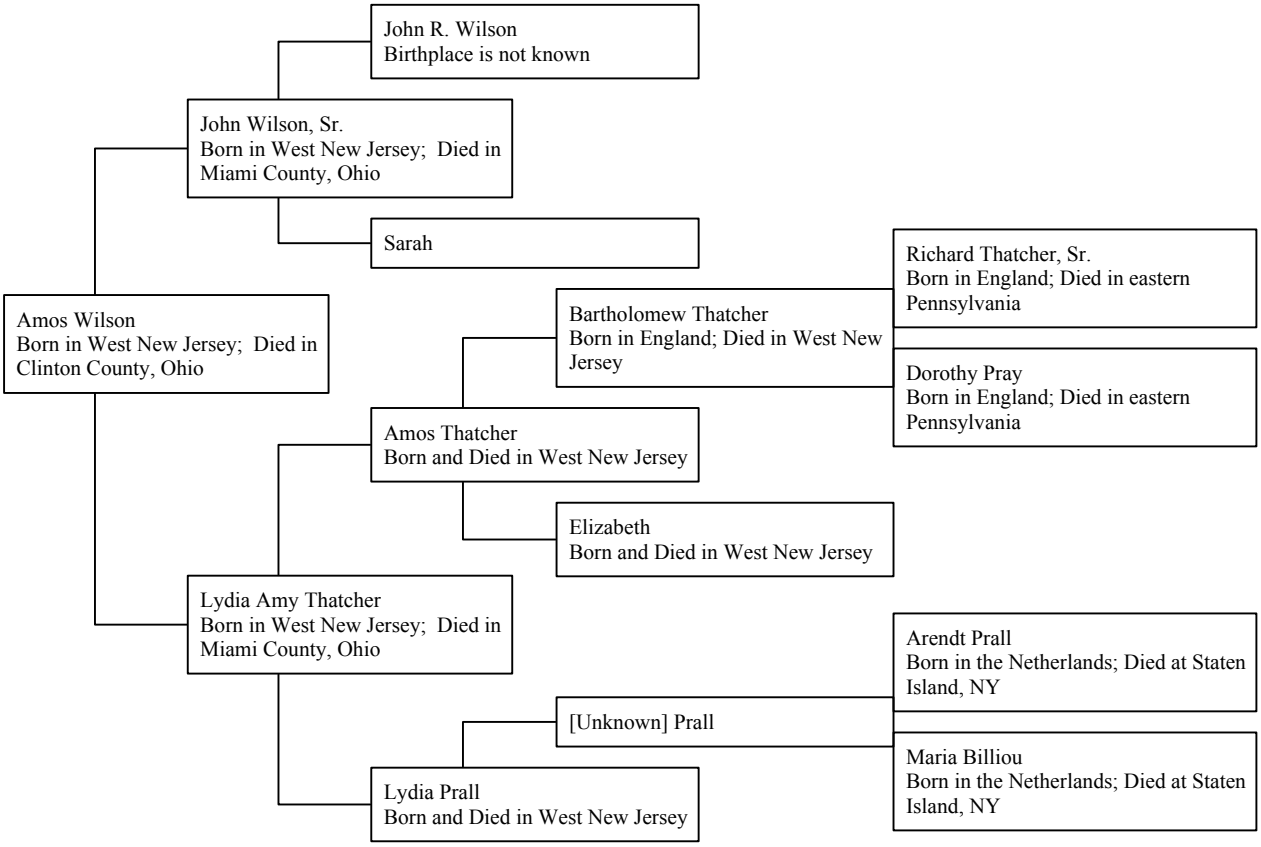
John Day and his wife **Elizabeth Harvey** came to America in about 1682-83 from Hertford, England, as part of the Quaker migration. John Day was born in 1665 in Hertford, and his wife Elizabeth was born in 1666. They settled in Burlington County, West Jersey. They had at least three children, including daughter **Elizabeth Day**, born in Burlington County on November 20, 1685. John Day died in 1724 in Burlington County.

Thomas L. Branson came to America from Berkshire, England in about 1682 as part of the Quaker migration, and settled in Burlington County, West Jersey. Thomas was born in February 1670 in Berkshire. **Thomas Branson** married **Elizabeth Day** on October 4, 1702, in Burlington County. They had ten children, including **Mary Branson**, who was born about 1722. Thomas and family moved for a time to the Shenendoah Valley in Virginia, and acquired some land there, but they decided to move back to Burlington, where he died on October 11, 1744. His Will gave to his

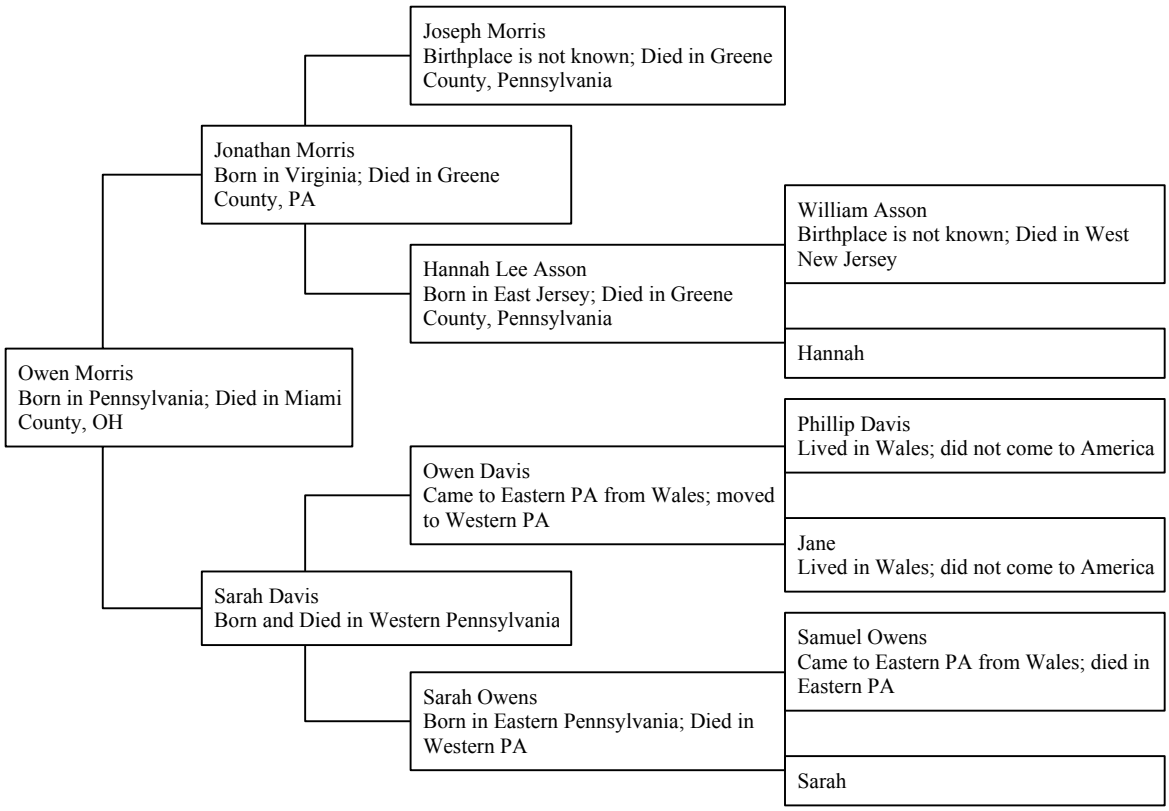
grandson Thomas a tract of land lying on the “Shanadow River” in Virginia. His wife Elizabeth died April 2, 1754 in Burlington.

The following genealogy charts show Harriet Ellen Morris’s and Moses Frazee’s ancestors in West New Jersey and nearby Pennsylvania in the early 1700s.

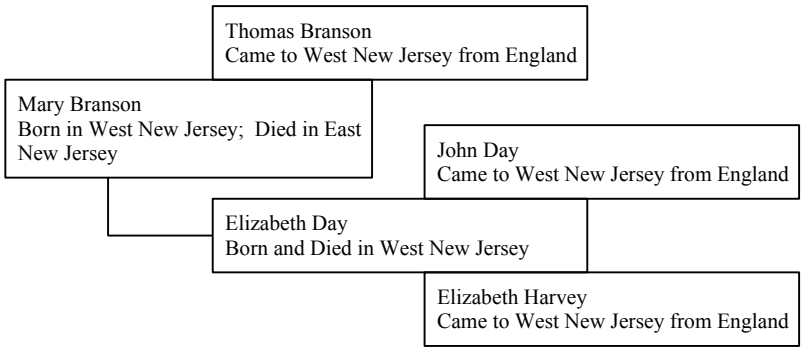
Some of Harriet Ellen Morris' Ancestors in West New Jersey



Some of Harriet Ellen Morris' Ancestors in Pennsylvania



Moses R. Frazee's Ancestors in West Jersey



A New Century

Almost all of our ancestors discussed up to this point had immigrated to America and settled in New England, New Netherland, New Jersey or Pennsylvania before 1700. Only Owen Davis is known to have arrived in America after 1700. By 1700, several of the American ancestors of Mary Smith, Moses Frazee, and Harriet Ellen Morris had been in America for multiple generations.

Most of these ancestors were among the first European settlers in their part of the North American continent. In most cases there was no established government when they arrived; there was no established judicial system or police force; there was no established system of commerce; there was no established communication system; there was no medical care system; there was a continued threat of attack by the natives; and there was no assurance that the "mother country" would come to their aid. Except for the limited area of New Amsterdam, these ancestors had no support system except their families and the members of the community who had settled with them. For many of them, their religious congregation was the only established institution available in their new surroundings.

Except for the Dutch families, and the Scot prisoner, all the other ancestors who came to America prior to 1700 came as part of groups either fleeing religious persecution or seeking freedom to practice their religion without government interference.

Most of our ancestors were farmers, and by the early 1700s, farming methods had not improved significantly from those practiced by the early Plymouth Colony settlers. But the types of livestock and crops grown had changed somewhat. More livestock had been imported from Europe, and successful breeding in America had increased the availability of food from cattle, hogs, sheep, and poultry. Except for the turkey, all the livestock grown on the colonial farms had come from Europe. The settlers also imported small grains, clover, alfalfa and various fruits and vegetables from Europe. And they had learned how to grow and prepare many other crops native to America, including maize, sweet potatoes, tomatoes, pumpkins, squash, a variety of beans, pecans, and peanuts. But most of the farmers in New England, New Jersey, and Pennsylvania were subsistence farmers, growing enough for their own use, with hopefully a little left over to trade for some manufactured items.

By 1700, there were an estimated 250,000 immigrants from England in the colonies, and about 8000 from the Netherlands. In 1700, Esther's ancestors were clustered almost entirely in three locations: on Cape Cod; around present-day New York City; and near the Delaware River in New Jersey and Pennsylvania.

Chapter 10: Growth of the Thirteen Colonies

The British government, whether Royal or Republican, exercised very little authority over the early English settlements in America. Basically the government granted charters to financiers or "proprietors" to explore and settle in defined areas of America, and then left them to their own devices to finance and manage the colonies. The colonies either developed their own set of laws applicable to their residents, or the proprietors imposed a set of laws on the residents and assigned governors to enforce the laws.

This relative freedom from the mother country of the English colonies in America began to change in the late 1600s as the King became interested in the potential wealth of the expanding colonies. In 1679, New Hampshire became a Royal Colony. In 1685 New York became a Royal Colony. In 1686, King James II began consolidating the colonies of New England into a single Dominion, depriving colonists of their local political rights. Legislatures were dissolved and the King's representatives assumed all of the judicial and legislative power. In 1691, Massachusetts was established as a Royal Colony, combining the separate colonies of Massachusetts Bay and Plymouth, and the British crown named a Royal Governor to administer the Colony. In 1702, New Jersey became a Royal Colony. By 1752, there were thirteen Colonies, with the establishment of Georgia as a Royal Colony.

Most of our ancestors' families were quite prolific and expanded along with the growth of the thirteen colonies. And there were a few new immigrants who married into the family during the 1700s.

The Smith Ancestors

On Cape Cod, Mary Smith's ancestor **Ralph Smith** (grandson of the immigrant Ralph Smith) and his wife **Mary Mayo** decided in 1739 to move to Connecticut, where there were more opportunities. Cape Cod was becoming crowded, and all the good farm land had been taken. They moved to a new settlement that they named Chatham, located just east of the Connecticut River, about half way between Long Island Sound and present-day Hartford, Connecticut. Several families from Eastham, Massachusetts, moved there at the same time and were the first settlers in Chatham. Chatham had good farm land, but also was a good location for manufacturing and trading, with easy access to transportation on the Connecticut River, and only a few miles to the sea.

When Ralph and Mary Smith moved to Connecticut, they already had eight children: Isaac, Phebe, Thomas, Enoch, Mary, Jonathan, **Ezra**, and Heman. The seventh child, **Ezra,** was not quite seven years old when they moved to Chatham. He was only 12 years old when his mother died on July 13, 1744, at the age of 52.

Meanwhile back in Eastham, on Cape Cod, **Samuel Brown, Jr**., son of Samuel Brown, Sr., and **Lydia Fish** (daughter of Jonathan Fish) had raised a family,

including daughter **Bethia Brown**, born in Eastham in 1728. Samuel died in May, 1739, at only 49 years of age, when Bethia was only eleven years old.

After Ralph Smith's first wife died, he married Lydia Fish Brown, the widow of Samuel Brown. Ralph Smith and Lydia Brown were married in Chatham on August 13, 1745, and Lydia moved to Chatham with her children, including **Bethia Brown** who was now 17 years old. Ezra was not quite 14 years old when he suddenly gained a step-sister.

Ezra Smith grew up in Chatham, and married **Bethia Brown,** his step-sister, on March 31, 1757. Apparently it was not love at first sight, because they got married 12 years after Bethia had moved in with the family.

Ralph Smith died on April 8, 1763, at the age of 80. His Will, which had been prepared prior to Ezra's marriage, included a bequest to Bethia: "I give and bequeath unto Bethyah Brown out of my personal estate the old feather bed and pewter porringer, and two pewter plates to her"

Ezra and Bethia had six children: Lydia, Ezra, Bethia, **Samuel**, Henrietta, and Lucinthy. The fourth child, **Samuel Smith**, was born April 14, 1765 in Chatham, Connecticut.

While Ezra and Bethia were busy raising a family, there was growing unrest among many of the leading citizens of the colonies regarding the increased taxes and other "arbitrary" actions of the British government.

When the War with Britain started in 1775, Ezra was already a member of the Connecticut militia, and served as a Lieutenant in the 4th Regiment of the Connecticut militia during the Revolutionary War. He was already 43 years old at the outbreak of the war.

Bethia died on April 22, 1793 in Chatham. Ezra died in Chatham in 1805.

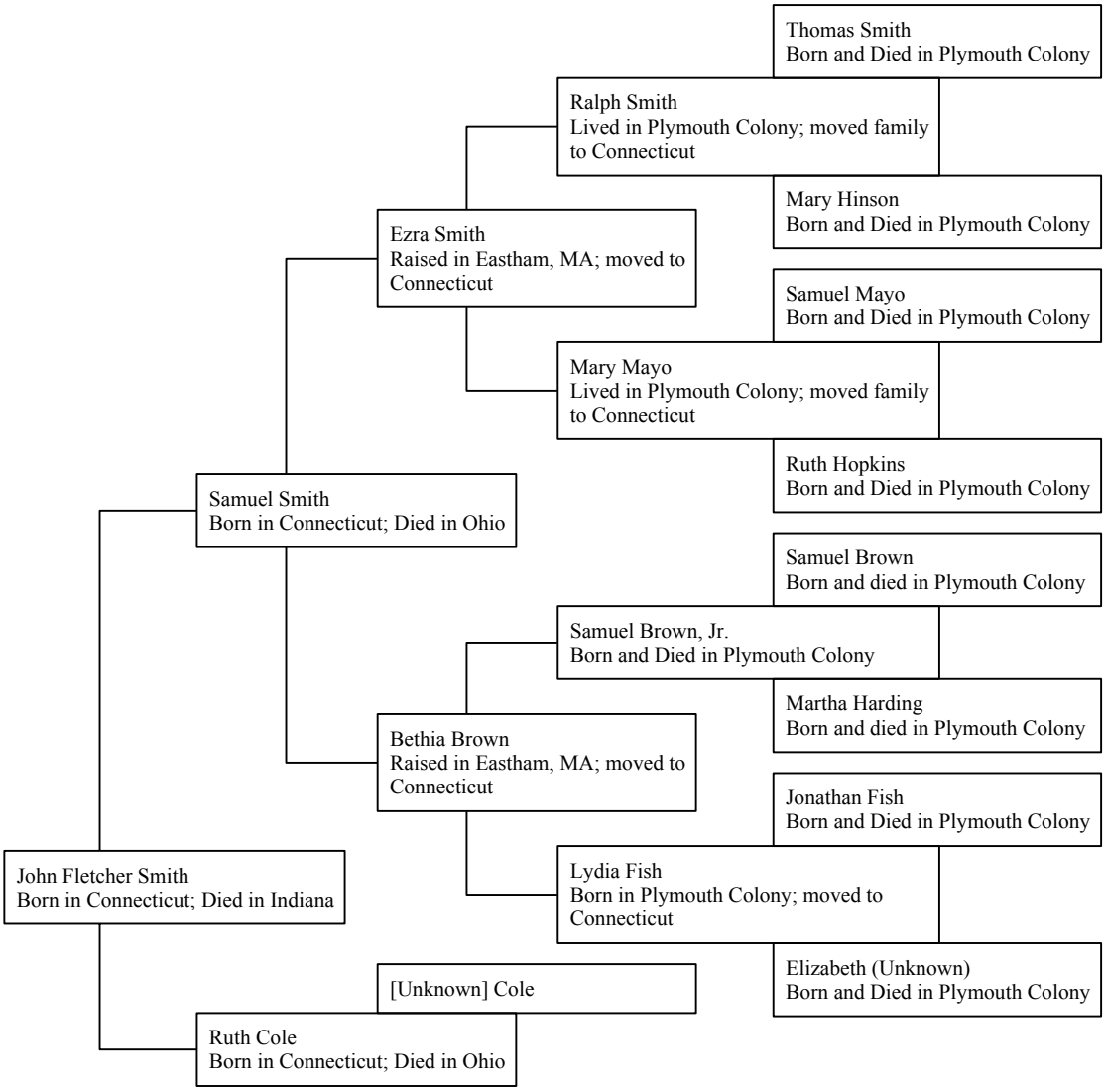
Samuel Smith was 11 years old when representatives of the thirteen colonies declared independence from British rule, and issued their proclamation on July 4, 1776.

Samuel married **Ruth Cole** on September 12, 1791, when he was 26. I have not found any records to specifically identify Ruth Cole's parents, but it is almost certain that they were part of the Cole family who lived in Eastham, Plymouth Colony and moved to Chatham, Connecticut in 1739 when the Smith's moved there.

Samuel and Ruth had nine children: Sophronia, Ezra Brown, Betsy, John Fletcher, Ruth, Lucinda, Samuel Emery, Almira, and Tryphana. The oldest children were born in Chatham, including **John Fletcher Smith**, who was born August 30, 1799.

In about 1810, Samuel and Ruth moved their family to Cuyahoga County, Ohio, where we will meet them again.

Smith Ancestors in Connecticut



Frazee Ancestors

By the early 1700s, all of our ancestors, or their offspring, who had been living in Long Island, or Westchester, New York, or western Connecticut, had moved to East New Jersey, where they joined the first settlers in the area. There they inter-married and raised their families through the 1700s.

They were in the very heart of the War for Independence that was contested heavily in New Jersey.

These families lived in East New Jersey until the late 1700s and early 1800s when some of the younger generations began moving west to the new states and territories opening up after the end of the War. Our ancestors were among those who moved west.

The Winans, Palmer, Mills and Frazee Families

Conrad Winans, son of Jan Winans and Susannah Melyn, had moved to Elizabethtown with his father. He married **Sara Palmer**, daughter of James Palmer and Sarah Denham, and the granddaughter of Lt. William Palmer and Judith Feake Palmer who moved from Plymouth Colony to Long Island. Conrad and Sara's son **Jonathan Winans** married his sccond cousin **Susannah Mills**, daughter of Samuel Mill, Jr. and Susanna Palmer, another granddaughter of Lt. William Palmer and Judith Feake.

Jonathan and Susannah's children included **Susanna Winans**, born March 9, 1734. She married Moses (I) Frazee in about 1755 (see below).

Gershom Frazee (the grandson of Joseph Frazey and the son of John Frazee and Sarah Oliver) and his wife **Abigail (Unknown)** had at least four children, including Moses I who was born about 1731 in Elizabethtown, New Jersey. **Moses (I) Frazee,** grew up in Elizabethtown and married **Susanna Winans** (see above) in about 1755. They had at least five children: Sarah, Susannah, Matthias (who died as an infant), Matthias, and Moses. I will refer to this Moses as Moses (II). M**oses (II) Frazee** was born January 18, 1762, in Westfield, New Jersey, a town just west of Elizabeth, in what used to be fields to the west of Elizabeth; it is only about 20 miles from New York City. Moses (I) and Susanna lived in Short Hills, four miles from Westfield. He died in about 1814.

Moses (II) Frazee grew up in the Westfield / Elizabeth area, and served in the New Jersey militia as a Private in the latter part of the Revolutionary War. After the war he moved west, first to Kentucky, where we will meet him again.

There is not much written about the personal lives of our ancestors in East New Jersey, but I found the following information about a great-uncle, Gershom, Jr. He was the brother of our ancestor Moses (I). Gershom, Jr. was a carpenter and cabinetmaker and was the builder and owner of the "Elizabeth and Gershom Frazee House" which has been preserved as an historic building by the Garden State

Historic Preservation Trust, and is currently open for public viewing. The house is described below. The description provides an indication of the strong Dutch influence in East New Jersey.

"The Frazee house dates to c. 1740-60, the larger section constructed with Dutch style framing by Gershom Frazee, a carpenter and cabinetmaker. It is significant for its association with Frazee and his wife, Elizabeth, who provided food for the troops (during the Revolutionary War). Occupied as a farm until 1949, the six acre property was privately owned until 1997. When the property was threatened to be sold and subdivided in 2003, the local rotary began negotiations for a 50 year lease and made plans to restore the structure."

"The Frazee House in Scotch Plains at Two Bridges, near the intersection of Raritan and Terrill Roads west of Ash Swamp, is an Anglo-Dutch style colonial home. It was very likely built by the 18th century carpenter and joiner, Gershom Frazee who bought his property from one Jacob Winans, (Note: probably a nephew of our ancestor Conrad Winans) *also a carpenter, in the 1750s. Winans was a Dutch family from the Staten Island vicinity. Frazee also built a house frame with James S. Coberly in 1758 for Cabinetmaker Samuel Prince on William Street in NY near where the Scotch Plains Baptist Society was then founding the NY Baptist Church. Frazee also bought wood from Douw of Albany at one point. Frazee was influenced by the earlier Dutch homes of the region with their low profile and cantileered pent roof that extends in front of the kitchen. The heavy, widely-spaced beaded joists with plank floors are also characteristic of Dutch vs. English "summer beam" and light joist construction techniques."*

"A Dutch-influenced Kas cupboard probably made by him and with an eighteenth-century joiner's bench, also probably Frazee's, were found in an early lumber shed, next to the corn crib of his brother Moses Frazee's home."

"Aunt Betty" Frazee and her husband Gershom, carpenter and joiner, raised their nephew Gershom Lee, son of her brother Thomas Lee. The tradition that she was baking bread during the Battle of Short Hills is supported by the fact that they fed American militia in 1777. Gershom's 1791 inventory lists 3 dough troughs, 3 flour casks, and a chest for bread strongly suggesting that Betty may well have been a bread baker. Based on the research conducted as part of this project and prior research, it appears that the kitchen wing of the existing "Aunt Betty Frazee House," as it is known, was possibly constructed for Gershom Frazee, Sr. (170?-1754) after his arrival with his wife from Rahway in 1727.

The Gershom Frazee, Sr. mentioned above is the ancestor of Moses R. Frazee.

The Fitz Randolph, Robbins, and Wolcott Families

Isaac Fitz Randolph, the son of Benjamin Fitz Randolph of Woodbridge, New Jersey, and Sarah Dennis of Woodbridge, married **Rebecca Seabrook**, daughter of James Seabrook and Hannah Grover, from nearby Middletown, on November 28, 1728. Their children included **Rhoda Fitz Randolph**, born in 1734 in the Woodbridge area.

Zachariah Robbins, the son of Moses Robbins and Mary Sickles, married **Mary Branson,** the daughter of Thomas Branson and Elizabeth Day. Their children included **Moses Robins** who married **Rhoda Fitz Randolph**. Their children included **Rebecca Robins**, born October 19, 1759, who married **Jacob Wolcott** from nearby Shrewsbury, New Jersey.

Benjamin Wolcott was born July 18, 1724, son of Benjamin and Meribah Wolcott. He married Clementine Cook in 1750 (I have no further information about Clementine Cook). Benjamin's first wife, Rachel, had died after only a year of marriage. Benjamin was a Quaker and was active in the Friends Meetings. He worked as a weaver and a school teacher. Benjamin and Clementine lived in Shrewsbury, New Jersey, where they raised their children Peter, Jacob, Benjamin, Elizabeth, Henry, Meribah, and Amos. Son **Jacob** was born February 7, 1755. Benjamin died in 1790 in Shrewsbury. In his Will, he left his house and weaving equipment to his widow, "Clemy", and his land, etc., to his children.

Jacob Wolcott, son of Benjamin Wolcott and Clementine Cook**,** grew up in Shrewsbury, and married **Rebecca Robins** in about 1779. Records show that he was active in the Shrewsbury Friends Church (Quakers), and witnessed weddings in the church at various times in 1775 thru 1779. It appears that he and Rebecca moved to Mansfield, New Jersey, in Burlington County, after their marriage. Burlington County had been settled primarily by Quakers. It appears that Jacob did not serve in the New Jersey militia during the War for Independence. It is likely that he refused to serve because of his religious beliefs.

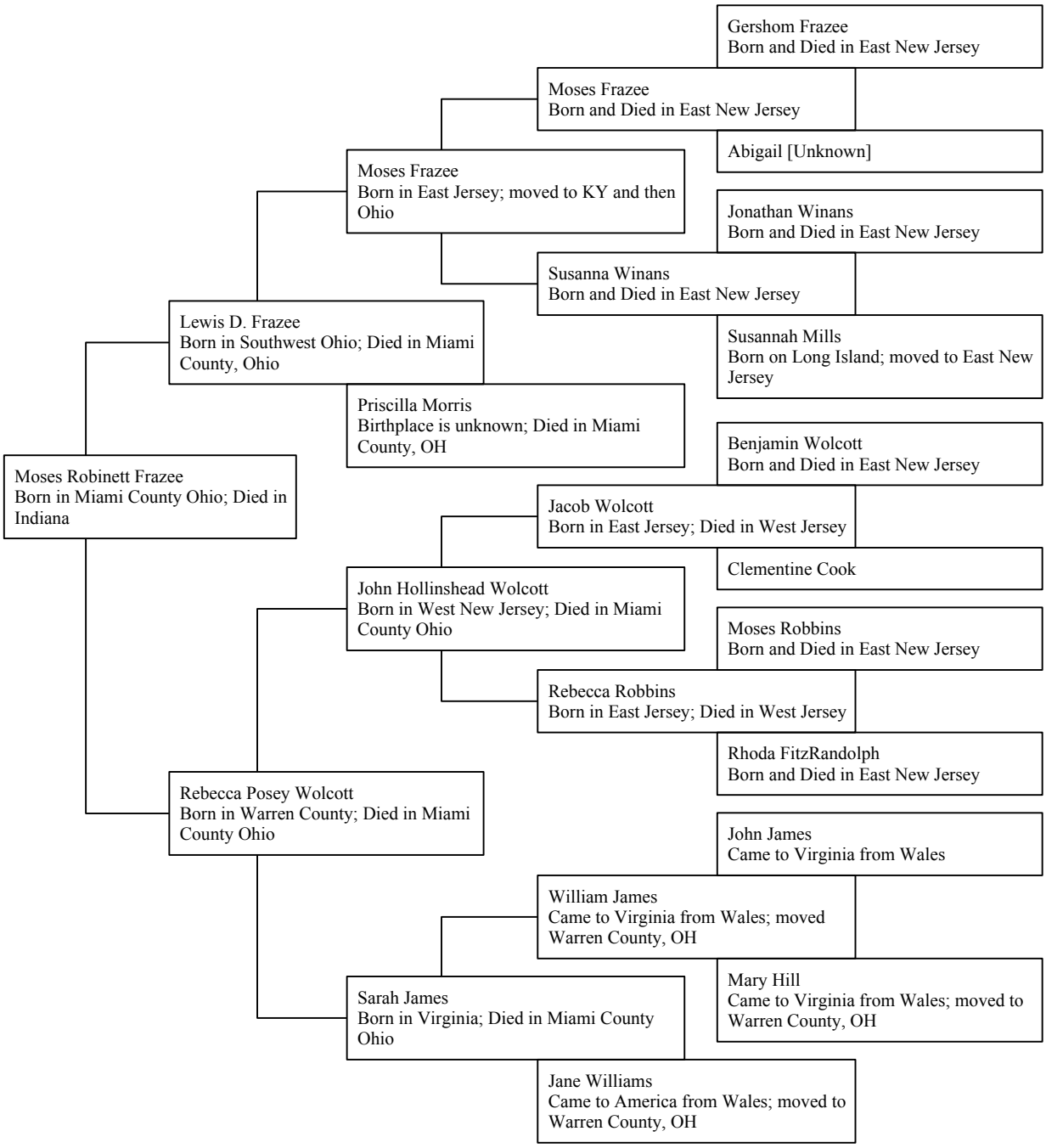
Jacob and Rebecca Wolcott had nine children: Rhoda, Benjamin Robins, Mary, John Hollinshead, Elizabeth, Nancy (died young), Joseph, Jacob, and Nancy. Their son **John Hollinshead Wolcott** was born March 9, 1786, in Burlington County, New Jersey. Jacob served as a tax assessor in Burlington County between 1785 and 1790. In 1790, Jacob enrolled in the New Jersey militia in Burlington (after the end of the War). He served as Town Clerk in Mansfield Township, New Jersey in the later years of his life. He died in 1806 in Burlington County.

John Hollinshead Wolcott grew up in Burlington County, New Jersey, but then moved west in the early 1800s.

By the late 1700s, our ancestors in East New Jersey had produced thousands of offspring. They had survived the War for Independence. The Winans, Frazee,

Oliver, Dennis, Grover, Fitz Randolph, Lawrence, Wolcott, Robins, Bloomfields and Mills families all had a major impact on the development of East New Jersey. And some of these family members headed west after the War, including two of our ancestor's, **Moses (II) Frazee** and **John Hollinshead Wolcott**. Those two families would join up in Ohio, when Moses (II) Frazee's son, Lewis, married John Wolcott's daughter Rebecca, in 1833.

Frazee Ancestors in New Jersey & Pennsylvania



Morris Ancestors in West Jersey and Eastern Pennsylvania

The Thatcher, Wilson, Morris and Owen Families

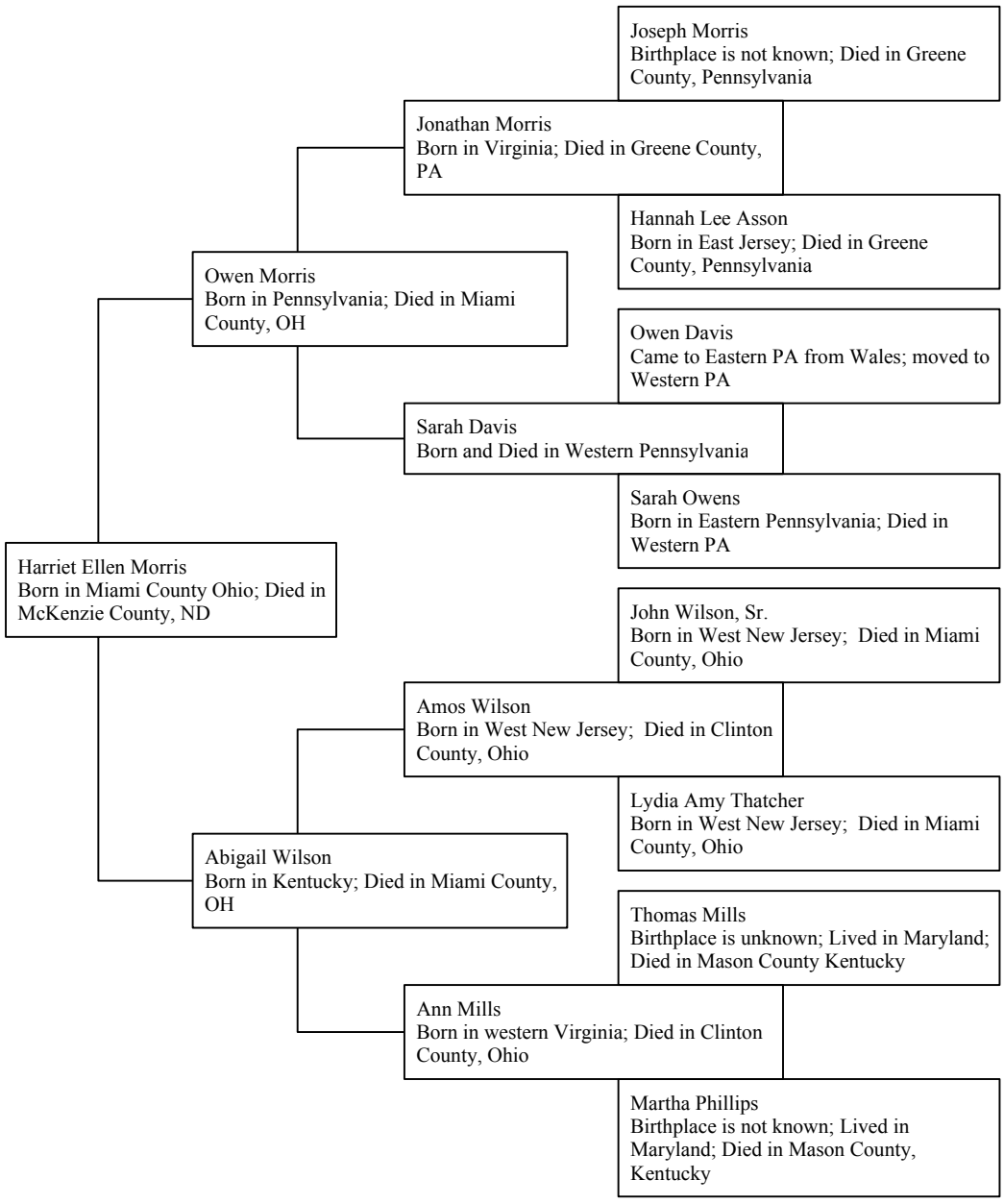
Amos Thatcher, son of Bartholomew Thatcher and Elizabeth (Unknown), grew up in Burlington, West New Jersey, and married **Lydia Prall** in 1726. Amos Thatcher and Lydia Prall had at least ten children (some researchers say 15), including **Lydia Amy**, who grew up in Amwell, Hunterdon County, New Jersey, and married **John Wilson**, who was born March, 1737 in Amwell. **John Wilson** and **Lydia Amy Thatcher** had eleven children between 1759 and 1785: Daniel, Amy, George, Lydia, Mary, **Amos**, Eleanor, Nancy, Sarah, John and Abigail. Son **Amos Wilson**, was born in west New Jersey (Sussex County) on April 7, 1770. The Wilson family began a series of moves west in about 1774, when **Amos** was about four years old. They first moved to Wyoming County, Pennsylvania, and then to Redstone County, in western Pennsylvania. John Wilson served in the Pennsylvania militia during the Revolutionary War (and is listed as a "Patriot" in the Daughters of the American Revolution database). I have no further information about his role in the War. After the victory over the British in 1781, they moved on to Kentucky, and we will meet them again there.

Joseph Morris, his wife **Hannah Asson,** and their children, who we met in Burlington County, West Jersey, moved from Burlington to what was then called Berkeley, Pennsylvania (or Virginia - it was on the border of the colonies - it is now part of West Virginia), in a place called Apple Pie Ridge. **Jonathan** was born there in about 1753. They later moved on to the far western part of Pennsylvania, as discussed below.

Sarah Owens, the daughter of **Samuel Owens** and **Sarah (Unknown),** married **Owen Davis** in about 1753. **Owen Davis** came to America in about 1751 as a young man and initially settled in eastern Pennsylvania, where he met and married Sarah Owens. Owen Davis and Sarah Owens would soon move on west, where we will meet them again.

The following genealogy charts show Harriet Ellen Morris's ancestors in West New Jersey and eastern Pennsylvania.

Morris Ancestors in New Jersey & Pennsylvania



Chapter 11: Beginning the Move West - The Western Frontier

European Settlers Begin to Move West in Pennsylvania, Maryland and Virginia

By the mid-1700s, both the British and the French claimed the vast territory between the Appalachian Mountains and the Mississippi River, and from the Great Lakes to the Gulf of Mexico, known as the Ohio Country. The English claims resulted from British royal grants which had no definite western boundaries. For example, the Virginia Colony extended west to the Mississippi River. The French claims resulted from La Salle's claiming the Mississippi River valley for France, and the drainage area includes the Ohio River Valley. Native Americans at times supported one side or the other, while trying to keep either side from gaining full control.

The French and Indian War was the continuation of the struggle between France and Britain for control of the North American continent, including the vast Ohio territory as well as the area now known as Quebec in Canada. The war spread to Europe as well. We know it as the French and Indian War, named for the two enemies of the British in the war. In Europe it is known as the Seven Years War. In Canada it is known as the Seven Years War or the War of Conquest.

The War in the Ohio territory started in 1754, when the French attempted to enforce their claims to the territory, and were confronted by a group of Virginian colonial militia, led by Major George Washington. This resulted in a skirmish in what is now western Pennsylvania, in which Washington was forced to retreat. General George Braddock then led a campaign against the French and their native American allies at Fort Duquesne (near present day Pittsburgh), in which his typical British offensive march was no match for the stealth of the French and natives gunning them down from trees and bushes. Braddock was killed in the encounter, and Washington barely escaped.

The war went on with several French victories, but the British pursued the fight over the next four years, both here and in Europe, while the French government generally neglected the North American theater of war. In 1758 and 1759, the British and their native allies regained many frontier posts and forts, and in 1760 the French surrendered and gave up their claims to the Ohio territory. The terms of surrender provided that any French residents who chose to remain in the colony would be given freedom to continue worshipping in their Roman Catholic tradition, continued ownership of their property, and the right to remain undisturbed in their homes.

Military expeditions during the French and Indian War established a major transportation artery, Braddock's Road, into Western Pennsylvania. This road provided relatively easy access to the area for immigrants from Maryland, Virginia and the Carolinas. The building of a second road, stretching from Carlisle, Pennsylvania to present-day Pittsburgh in 1758 by Brigadier General John Forbes, opened the region for settlers from eastern Pennsylvania.

At the end of the French and Indian War the British had about 10,000 troops in North America. The British felt they were spending too much money to defend the colonies, including protection from attacks by Native Americans. By war's end, the

British were 140 million pounds in debt, an enormous sum for them. The British tried to address both of their problems: governing and protecting the Colonists, as well as keeping their costs down.

First, they issued new proclamations to protect the Indians from further encroachment by the colonists. They attempted to prohibit English settlement west of the Appalachian mountains. They hoped this would decrease the violence between the Colonists and the natives, thus decreasing the need for troops. Second, the British government decided to increase existing taxes on the Colonists and impose new taxes, with the hopes of at least covering the cost of the British troops stationed in North America.

But the British were not successful in stopping the western settlements; the demand for new land was stronger than the fear of attack by natives, or punishment by the British authorities. In 1768, the Iroquois Confederacy ceded a chunk of land west of the Appalachians. The region was formally opened for settlement in April 1769, with the establishment of Pennsylvania's Land Office which issued warrants for land purchases. Fueled by glowing accounts from Colonial soldiers who had fought in the War, settlers poured into western Pennsylvania. Settlers included English who were moving on from eastern Pennsylvania, as well as newer immigrants, including Scots from Ulster, Germans, French Huguenots and Swiss.

The British imposition of additional taxes on the Colonists contributed to a deterioration in the economic, political, and social relations between Britain and its American colonies. These taxes contributed to the colonial quest for independence.

The French and Indian War resulted in opening up the western part of Pennsylvania and Maryland to settlers in the east who were looking for new lands to claim from Native Americans.

It was starting to get crowded in West New Jersey and eastern Pennsylvania and some of our ancestors began to settle father west in Pennsylvania, Maryland and Virginia, in the area now known as Franklin County, PA, in south central Pennsylvania and nearby areas in Maryland and Virginia to the south, near present day Hagerstown, Maryland. There was some initial settlement in this area prior to the French and Indian War, but the War effort by the British and colonial governments made it easier and safer for more settlement in the following years.

Some of our ancestors settled in a place called Little Cove, located right on the Pennsylvania border with Maryland, and a bit east of the present route of I-70 as it runs from Maryland into Pennsylvania. And other ancestors settled just to the south in the Maryland or Virginia colonies. Both Morris and Frazee ancestors lived in this area before they moved on west, as described below.

After the end of the French and Indian War in 1760, settlers moved into far western Pennsylvania. Westmoreland County was established in 1773, the first county established in the Colony of Pennsylvania west of the Allegheny Mountains. It was the parent county for all or parts of ten Southwestern Pennsylvania counties. In 1781 it was divided to create Washington County, with another portion carved out to form

Fayette County in 1783. Allegheny County was created in 1788 from parts of both Washington and Westmoreland Counties, and Greene County was born from a portion of Washington County in 1796.

Several ancestors lived in this area, as noted below.

Morris Ancestors in Central and Western Pennsylvania

Owen Davis and **Sarah Owens** were among the early settlers in central Pennsylvania, in the Little Cove settlement. They moved from east Pennsylvania. Owen Davis served with the Pennsylvania militia in the French & Indian War which started in 1754. He was a wagon driver for General Braddock's ill-fated campaign against the French in 1755, and managed to escape the fiasco unharmed. After the War, he and Sarah moved to western Pennsylvania and settled in what became Fayette County, in the southwestern part of the colony. He and his family became active in the Mt. Moriah Baptist Church in Georges Township in Fayette County.

Owen Davis and Sarah Owens had five children before she died in 1762 at the age of only 26. Their daughter **Sarah Davis** was born in 1757. After Sarah Owen's death, Owen remarried (to Hannah James) and had twelve more children with Hannah. Owen died (of exhaustion?) at age 84, on July 7, 1810. He is buried in the Davis Cemetery near Rubles Mill, Fayette County, Pennsylvania.

In about 1775**, Joseph Morris** and his wife **Hannah Asson** and some of their children moved from central Pennsylvania to Garrard's Fort, in what was then called Washington County, in the southwest corner of present-day Pennsylvania. They settled in the southern part of the county that later became Greene County.

Permanent settlement began in what was to become Greene County in 1764 after the last major Native American uprising in western Pennsylvania. But attacks by the natives did not end, and two forts were constructed in 1774: Jackson's Fort and Garrard's Fort, to provide some protection. From 1774 to 1804, there were many Native American attacks on isolated homes in the area, but the natives were fighting a losing battle as the European settlers continued to come.

Grazing sheep on the steep terrain of Greene County became the primary agriculture endeavor. The county at one time was the largest producer of merino wool in the country. In later years coal mining and gas production added some prosperity to the region.

Ancestor **Hannah Morris** died in Greene County in 1783, and **Joseph** died there in 1788. They were buried at Garrard's Fort.

Joseph and Hannah's son **Jonathan Morris** married **Sarah Davis**, daughter of Owen Davis and Sarah Owens (see above) in 1776. Jonathan and wife Sarah settled near his parents at Garrard's Fort, Pennsylvania after their marriage. They had at least seven children between 1777 and 1798: Samuel, Joseph, **Owen** (father of Harriet Ellen Morris), Lucretia Louisa, Mary, Sarah, and Abner. They were all born in what is now Greene County, Pennsylvania. **Owen Morris** was born October 25, 1783.

Jonathan Morris served in the Revolutionary War, and received a pension in his old age for his service in the War.

His wife Sarah died in 1798, at age 41. It appears that Jonathan remarried and had three or four more children with a second wife. Jonathan died in Greene County in 1841, at age 87.

Owen Morris grew up in Greene County, but moved to Ohio in the early 1800s, and we will meet up with him again there.

Thomas Mills was born in about 1740, but I do not have reliable information on where he was born. Some researchers claim he was the son of Jacob Mills and his wife Ann Davis, who lived near present day Hagerstown, Maryland, but I have not found records to confirm that. It is known that Thomas operated a tannery and sawmill in the Maryland colony, near the Pennsylvania border, not far from Little Cove, PA. He married **Martha Philips** from Little Cove in about 1771. I do not have reliable information on the birthplace of Martha Phillips; some researchers say Wales, and others say Pennsylvania. She was the daughter of **Evan Philips** and his wife **Catherine** who were born in Wales and came to America sometime before 1771.

Records show that Thomas and Martha Mills acquired some land in the mountainous part of the Virginia Colony, north of present-day Morgantown, West Virginia, by 1775. At that time there was not a defined boundary between the Pennsylvania and Virginia colonies in that area, and both colonies claimed this region. Thomas and Martha were founding members of the Forks of Cheat Baptist Church there in 1775. (Forks of Cheat refers to forks of the Cheat River that runs through the area.) Forks of Cheat is just south of the current border with far southwest Pennsylvania. They had several children, including **Ann Mills**, who was born about 1775 in the Virginia (or Pennsylvania) colony.

Thomas Mills served in the Revolutionary War as a Private. Records indicate that he served in the Pennsylvania militia. When the War was over, Thomas and Martha Mills and children were among those who headed west to Kentucky, where we will meet up with them again.

John Wilson, his wife Lydia Amy Thatcher and their children moved from Hunterdon County, West Jersey in about 1774, and settled for some time in Redstone County, adjoining Greene County in far western Pennsylvania. He served in the Pennsylvania militia during the Revolutionary War. After the war the family moved again, to Kentucky. It is possible that John Wilson and Thomas Mills served together or knew each other during these years. They moved near each other in Kentucky.

Frazee Ancestors in Central and Western Pennsylvania

John James, his wife **Mary Hill**, and their children came to America from Wales in about 1752. Their children included **William James** who was only about three years old when his parents brought him from Wales. He was born in Wales on November 29, 1749. The family initially settled in the northern part of Virginia, near the border with central Pennsylvania.

Note: Although Jesse James had an ancestor named William James, they were not the same person, and I have not found any connection between these two James families. So we are **not** closely related to Jesse James. For those looking for some infamous relatives, sorry.

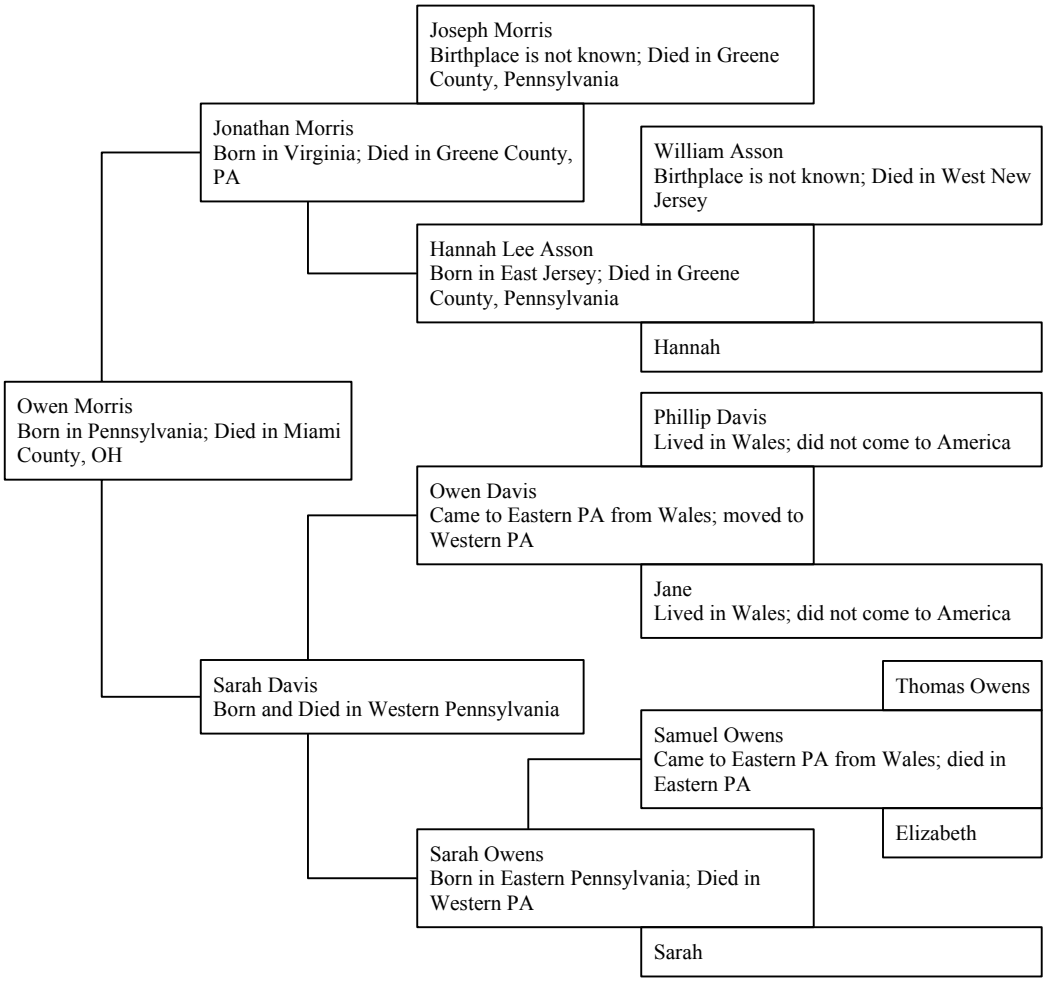
William James married **Jane Williams** in October 1772. Jane was born in Wales on July 31, 1750. I do not have any information about her parents or when she came to America, but they obviously came to America some time between 1750 and 1772, prior to the War for Independence. William and Jane had ten children, including **Sarah James** born in 1786 in Virginia. William and Jane moved their family to Warren County, Ohio in 1801, when daughter Sarah was 15 years old. This daughter of immigrants would marry **John Hollinshead Wolcott**, whose family roots went back almost 200 years in America.

New Immigrants into the Colonies

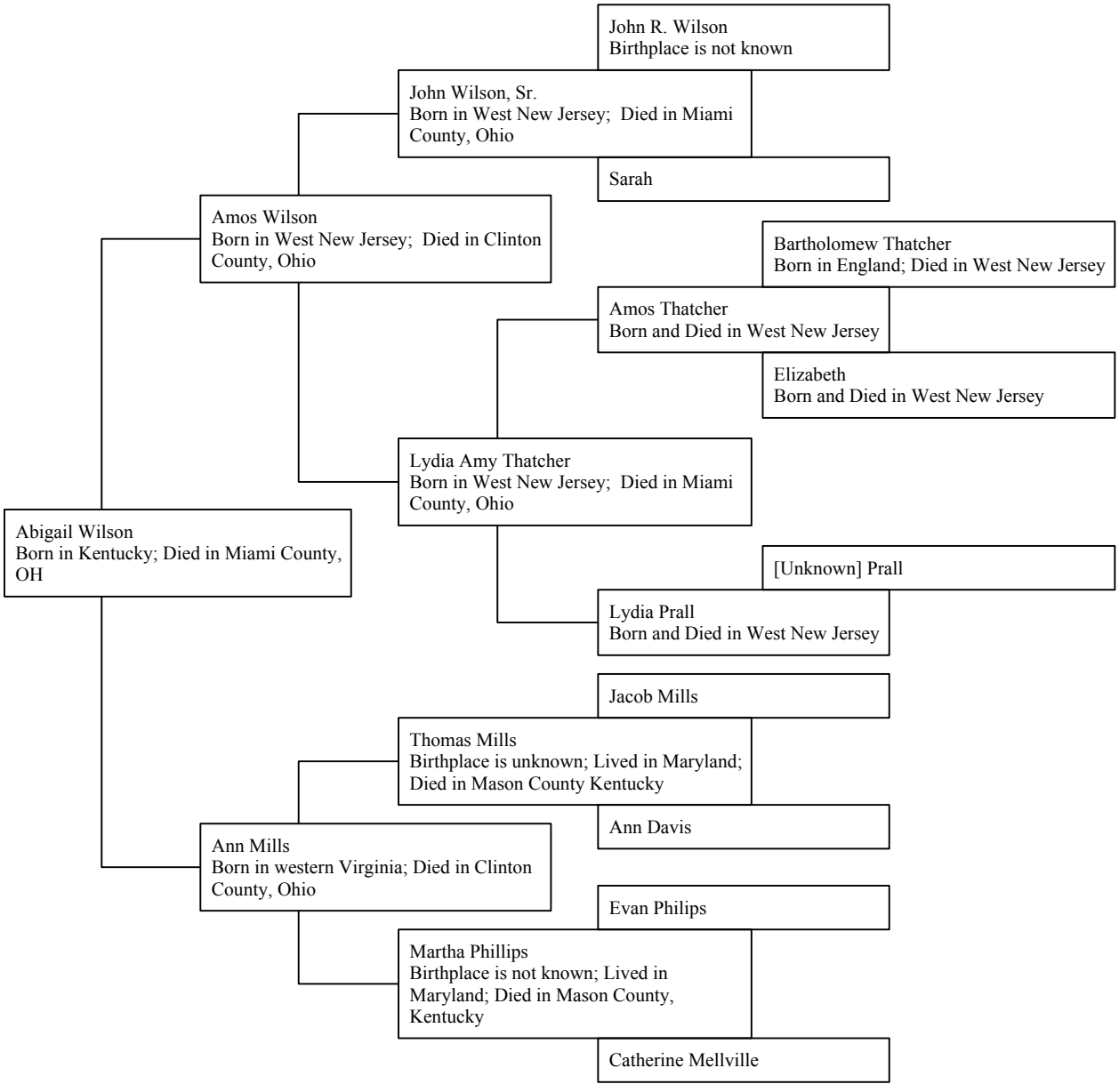
As noted previously, the ancestors who settled in Plymouth Colony, and Connecticut, and East Jersey, and West Jersey, and east Pennsylvania had all come to America before 1700.

A few of our ancestors immigrated to America in the mid-1700s, and married into the established American families. They included the Davis, Owens, James and Williams families, who arrived in America between 1750 and 1775. All of these families were from Wales.

Morris Ancestors Start Moving West



Wilson & Mills Families Start Moving West



Chapter 12: The War for Independence

Why the War?

Following is a brief summary of the War for Independence (or Against Independence if on the British side), and the impact it had on our ancestors. Historians suggest many causes for the War, but it is clear that the taxes imposed after the French and Indian War, and the British attempt to slow English settlement into the Ohio territory, were major factors contributing to the growing unhappiness by the Colonists with the authorities in Britain. The Colonists had quickly forgotten their gratitude to the British crown for driving the French out of the Ohio territory. Their unhappiness increased in 1765 when the British passed the Quartering Act which forced American colonists to pay for housing and feeding British forces who were serving in North America. This was effectively another large tax, and the continued close contact with British soldiers did not improve Colonists feelings for the British. The Colonists appreciated the protection provided by the British, but they didn't want the expense or close relations required for that protection. For many Euro-Americans it had been 100 years of more since their ancestors left Britain, and their attachments to the "mother country" no longer existed.

Britain added insult to injury by unilaterally imposing the Stamp Act tax in 1765. The stamp tax was imposed on every document or newspaper printed or used in the colonies. The taxes ranged from one shilling a newspaper to ten pounds for a lawyer's license. All the income was to go to help pay to protect the colonies. One of the most objectionable aspects of the taxes to the colonists was the fact that violation of the taxes would be prosecuted by British Admiralty Courts and not by jury trials. The colonies considered this tax to be unconstitutional, and there was widespread outrage among Colonists. Many Colonists took the position that only the duly elected local governments had the power to levy taxes and conduct trials.

Colonial protests were not of much concern in Britain, and in 1767 the Parliament passed a series of laws imposing new taxes on the colonists. These laws included special taxes on lead, paint, paper, glass and tea imported by colonists. In addition, the New York legislature was suspended until it agreed to quarter British soldiers. The Acts also insured that colonial officials, including governors and judges, would receive their salaries directly from the Crown. This went over like a lead balloon, and in 1768, in response to colonial protests and increasing attacks on British colonial officials, the British sent about 4000 troops to restore order in Boston. This led to the so-called Boston Massacre, and then to the Boston Tea Party, and the beginning of major hostilities in 1775. By the spring of 1776, British authorities had been removed from power in every colony, and every colony governed itself under their local charters, congresses or committees. The colonies had recruited armies, issued money and even had several ships at sea loyal to the new colonial governments. Up to this time, many in the colonies hoped that they could continue as part of the British empire, but by the spring of 1776 the leaders had given up hope of the British "coming to their senses", resulting in the Declaration of Independence.

The war with Britain to gain independence for the colonies was not a revolution to overthrow the rulers, in the sense of other great revolutions, such as later revolutions

in France and Russia. The colonists were not seeking to overthrow a repressive government of rich elite, as in the case of France and Russia. The American colonists just wanted a return to the good old days, when they were pretty much free to make their own laws and rules, even though some of those laws were quite outrageous. They wanted to go back to the good old days when the British were not imposing taxes on them. Those who wanted to settle new lands in the west did not believe they needed British troops to protect them. They could deal with the natives on their own.

The Euro-American leaders in the colonies were mainly educated and relatively wealthy land owners; they considered themselves to be the equals of those members of the British Parliament who were attempting to interfere in their lives. They were not seeking to overthrow the wealthy elite; they were the wealthy elite. They just wanted independence from interference by the wealthy elite in Britain. So this was not a revolutionary war; it was a war for independence; it was a war to essentially retain the status quo as it existed prior to 1764.

Impact of the War for Independence on Our Ancestors

Our ancestors' families were living in three of the primary fronts in the War: Massachusetts, East New Jersey, and the Delaware River valley.

Massachusetts

By 1775, we had no direct ancestors living in Massachusetts; they had all died or moved away. There were still many of our ancestors' families in Massachusetts, but they were not in the midst of battlefields or encampments. Most of the military action took place in Boston and its immediate vicinity. Most of our ancestors' families were living on Cape Cod at this time, far enough away from Boston to avoid any immediate threat from battle or from military encampments from either side.

Connecticut

In Connecticut in 1775 there were our direct ancestors **Ezra Smith** and his wife **Bethi**a **Brown**, and their son **Samuel Smith**, and the **Cole** family, as well as several other relatives of our ancestors. Connecticut was not a center of great battles of the war, but there were several British excursions that caused major damage. In more than one case British generals attempted to distract General Washington, who was marching south, by attacking the important Northern supply centers in Connecticut. One such attack on New London resulted in the torching of stockpiles of goods, naval stores and ships. Nearly all the town, 143 buildings, was consumed by fire. Many other towns near navigable waters in Connecticut were plundered by the British. But unlike New Jersey, the British did not maintain an occupation force in Connecticut for any extended period.

During much of the war the British blockaded Long Island Sound, which was the water access to Connecticut ports. This caused hardships for many communities that were dependent on trading by water. But the Connecticut ports, including those along the Connecticut River, were still able to build and service ships that harassed the British fleet.

New Jersey

The situation for our ancestors in New Jersey was much different. In 1775, there were still several direct ancestors living in East New Jersey, including: **Moses (I) Frazee** and his wife **Susanna**, and their son **Moses (II) Frazee**; **Benjamin Wolcott** and his wife **Clementine**, and their son **Jacob Wolcott**; and **Moses Robbins** and his wife **Rhoda Fitz Randolph**, and their daughter **Rebecca Robins**. In West New Jersey in 1775 were **Amos Thatcher** and his wife **Lydia Prall.** In addition, there were hundreds of our ancestors' family members living in New Jersey at the time.

New Jersey has been called the crossroads of the American Revolution, because the armies of both sides were in or crossing it throughout the war. It was heavily involved in the fighting, due to the troop movements through the state, and its key geographic position between New York City and Philadelphia. New Jersey had more military engagements than any other state during the war.

After the British captured New York City in the summer of 1776, their next major objective was New Jersey. In November of 1776 they began their assault and quickly forced the American army to retreat. By the end of November they had captured Essex County (formerly Elizabethtown), the home of many of our ancestors' families. Within a week they had moved southeast and captured Piscataway and Woodbridge, and then moved west toward Princeton. By mid-December the British had captured Trenton in Burlington County, and were in control of most of central New Jersey, from the Hudson to the Delaware. General Washington had been forced to retreat into Pennsylvania, west of the Delaware River.

The British army spent the remainder of that winter encamped in New Jersey, living off the local population. They took what they needed, and as the winter wore on, they went farther from their camps to find food, firewood and whatever else was desired. The British were expecting an easy victory over the American army, and offered "protection papers" to anyone who would swear allegiance to King George. It was reported that over 3000 people in New Jersey took the oath to the King; some swore allegiance because of belief, and many because of fear for their lives and property if they did not.

West New Jersey saw some significant military action, including the famous Christmas night attack when Washington crossed the Delaware and overcame the Hessian troops in Trenton, in 1776. American losses were only 4 dead and a like number wounded. This was followed by the surprise attack on British troops near Princeton in January 1777, in which the Americans defeated the British, inflicting losses of 400-600 killed, wounded, and prisoners at a cost of 30 patriots killed and wounded. The pressure on residents to choose sides increased after Washington's surprise successful attacks in Trenton and Princeton, which prompted increased British activity in New Jersey during the winter of 1776-1777.

The largest engagement of the War, in terms of the number of troops involved, was the Battle of Brandywine, in September, 1777, in which the British attempted to capture Philadelphia. Some 15,000 British troops under Howe's command sailed

from New York to attack Philadelphia, while General Washington, with about 11,000 men, took up a defensive position blocking the way to Philadelphia at Chad's Ford on the eastern side of Brandywine Creek in Pennsylvania. Howe attacked on September 11, forcing the Americans to retreat to Chester in a hard-pressed but orderly retreat. Patriot losses in this engagement totaled about 1,000 casualties (killed, wounded, and captured). British casualties were less than 600. This was followed by the Battle of Germantown, in October, 1777, after the British had captured Philadelphia and established an encampment at nearby Germantown. General Washington attempted an attack against this garrison. Again the Americans were forced to retreat after running low on ammunition. American losses were 673 killed and wounded and about 400 taken prisoner. British losses were approximately 533 killed and wounded.

On June 28, 1778, one of the major battles of the war took place in Monmouth County (home of several of our ancestors' families). After conclusion of the Franco-American Alliance in February, 1778, British forces had to give consideration to the new threat created by the powerful French fleet. General Clinton, the British commander in America, decided to shift the main body of his troops from Philadelphia to a point nearer the coast where it would be easier to maintain close communications with the British Fleet. He ordered evacuation of the 10,000-man garrison in Philadelphia on June 18. As these troops set out through New Jersey toward New York, Washington broke camp at his headquarters in Valley Forge and began pursuit of Clinton with an army of about 13,500 men. A battle took place on June 28, which continued until dark without either side retiring from the field. But during the night the British slipped away, and their fleet took them to New York City. The British reported losses of 65 killed, 155 wounded, and 64 missing; the Americans listed 69 killed, 161 wounded, and 130 missing.

This was one of the major battles of the War, but only 134 were reported killed on both sides. In contrast, in the Civil War battle at Gettysburg, it was estimated that over 6,000 were killed (the Union Army alone had over 3,000 killed), and total casualties (killed, wounded or captured) were estimated at over 50,000. The War for Independence was a much saner war than the later Civil War. There were no Generals marching their troops to be mowed down by cannon and self-loading rifles, as was the case in the Civil War. The Americans were wary of taking major losses because they had such a limited number of soldiers, and a devastating loss would have meant the end of the war, and almost certain execution for treason for many of the American leaders. On the other hand, the British soldiers and the Hessian mercenaries were not all that interested in dying for a cause that had little or no meaning to them.

The major battles of the War were relatively few, and did not have a significant impact on the local residents. The greater hardship resulted from the British troop encampments in the area, when troops plundered all surrounding houses and farms for anything of value, including farm animals, equipment, and tools. There also were numerous cases of British troops burning houses and other buildings of anyone thought to be supporting the patriots.

There were established rules of plundering. If a home or farm were unoccupied, it usually meant that the former occupant supported the other side, and it could be stripped clean. There were several towns in east New Jersey from which almost all residents had fled, and British troops plundered them clean and then destroyed the buildings. Another rule of plundering was that resistance by any residents was grounds for aggravated plundering. Residents were expected to show respect and submission to the British troops as they carried away whatever they wanted. But plunderers were supposed to leave enough behind at occupied homes so the residents did not starve. During the course of long winters in New Jersey, however, the British soldiers frequently got out of control, and plundering sometimes turned into pillaging and rape.

Loyalists Against Patriots

One of the most difficult problems facing the Colonists was deciding which side of the struggle to support, or whether to try to stay neutral. Some Colonists believed that the British actions were legitimate and there was no good basis for the American opposition. Even though many had fled Britain to escape persecution, some still considered themselves to be British. As the War broke out in 1775, most Colonists were forced to choose sides. In some communities the majority were Loyalists, and anyone labeled a Patriot was deemed to be a traitor. The opposite was true in other communities. In some cases family members were at war with each other over which side to support.

Several battles of the War were not fought between British and Americans, but between American Loyalists and American Patriots.

Monmouth County, home of several of our ancestors' families, including the Grovers, Robbins, Seabrooks and Wolcotts, was a center of Loyalists in New Jersey, and those who identified themselves as patriots were in danger. But in much of the rest of New Jersey, there was a very active patriot underground that harassed the British encampments throughout the winter. At the same time the British attempted to identify and eliminate anyone who was considered to be a "rebel". Many patriots fled with their families to Pennsylvania in the west or to the north, to avoid capture.

The Quakers, including several of our ancestors, almost always refused to take sides in the war, which infuriated both the British and the Americans. The Quakers angered the Patriots who viewed the Quakers as enjoying the benefits of independence from Britain but were unwilling to fight for it. And the British were angered that the Quakers were unwilling to swear allegiance to the King. The Quakers frequently were harassed by both sides in the war, and many had their homes and farms plundered by troops from either side.

When the War ended after the British surrender at Yorktown in 1781, the Loyalists in the colonies frequently found themselves in an untenable position. Some tried to fade from view in America, but many fled to the eastern provinces of Canada, or to Britain. A few of our great-uncles and aunts were among those who fled to Canada, but I have found no evidence that any of our ancestors were known Loyalists.

Our Ancestors in the Militias

During the War for Independence, the American army depended on each colony (or new state) to raise militias to defend their territories or to join the combined forces under General Washington. Many members of the militias never left their home state, while others marched up and down the east coast as the war moved from north to south and back to the north.

Several of our male ancestors who were of military age at the time, were members of their state's militia. At the outbreak of fighting in 1775, the following male ancestors were of military age: Thomas Mills (35), John Wilson (38), Jonathan Morris (22), William James (26), Ezra Smith (43), and Jacob Wolcott (20). Moses (II) Frazee was only 13 years old in 1775, but was old enough to join the New Jersey militia before the war ended.

In Connecticut, **Ezra Smith** was already a member of the Connecticut militia when the War started, and he served as a Lieutenant in the 4th Regiment of the Connecticut militia during the War. He was already 43 years old at the outbreak of the war. I have not found records of where he served during the War, but the Connecticut militia played major roles throughout the war, from the initial engagements in Boston, to the battles for New York, New Jersey, and Philadelphia.

In East New Jersey, **Moses (II) Frazee** served in the New Jersey militia as a Private in the latter part of the Revolutionary War. I have not found information on his experience in the militia. It is likely that he was in the militia only in the last year or two of the war, because he was still only 19 years old when the British surrendered at Yorktown in 1781. It is likely that his parents, Moses (I) and Susanna, and siblings were among those whose property was plundered by either the British or the American troops, or both, during the War.

I have not found any records showing plunder of the property of **Moses (I)**, but there is a record of property plundered by the British from his brother, Gershom, Jr., who lived in the same area, in the following account from a local historian:

During the Revolution, it appears clear that the Frazees were feeding the militia troops under Captain Littell in February of 1777, according to original documents cited by F.C. Detwiller in War in the Countryside, Battle and Plunder of the Short Hills, June 26, 1777. It also is clear that troops entered the Frazee house during the Battle of Short Hills on June 26, 1777, based on the damage claims filed by Gershom Frazee and neighbors as further cited by Detwiller with an illustration opposite p. 19 and p. 20. While Cornwallis may not have taken any bread, it seems the British troops certainly availed themselves of nearly everything else on the property. Claims filed by Gershom Frazee, Jr. for plundered items include "Tools Lost by the regular Forces, June 26th, 1777." The inventory lists 64 woodworking tools, three cows, 23 sheep, a hive of bees, and household goods.

Jonathan Morris, then living in western Pennsylvania, served in the Pennsylvania militia during the Revolutionary War, and received a pension in his old age for his service. It is likely that his service was on the western frontier, where the British, with support from some natives, carried out some attacks on American outposts.

Thomas Mills served in the War, as a Private, probably in the Pennsylvania militia.

John Wilson served in the Pennsylvania militia during the war, but I have no information on where he served.

It appears that **Jacob Wolcott** did not serve in the New Jersey militia during the War for Independence. It is likely that he refused to serve because of his Quaker religious beliefs. But in 1790, well after the end of the War, Jacob enrolled in the New Jersey militia in Burlington.

I have not yet found any record that **William James** served in a militia, and do not know whether he was a Quaker.

Chapter 13: Moving West in the New United States of America

With the defeat of the British army at Yorktown in 1781, and the subsequent Treaty of Paris in 1783 that formally ended the War for Independence, the new United States had a vast new territory in which to expand. As part of the Treaty, the British had ceded to the United States the territory west of the Appalachian mountains, all the way to the Mississippi. Although there had been a trickle of European settlers moving into this region prior to 1781, a large migration now began into what are now the states of Kentucky and Ohio, including several of our ancestors.

Kentucky

The area that is now Kentucky was first explored by English explorers in the mid-1700s, and much of what is now Kentucky was purchased from Native Americans in the treaties of Fort Stanwix (1768) and Sycamore Shoals (1775). Unlike most of the northeast, the Kentucky region was not occupied by native Americans; it was used as a hunting ground by different tribes.

The Ohio Land Company received a grant from the British crown of 200,000 acres in Kentucky, but the French continued to lay claim to the territory as well. The struggle for control of this territory between the British and the French was settled after the French and Indian War, which ended in 1763. The Treaty of Paris ceded Canada and all French claims east of the Mississippi to England, with the exception of New Orleans.

A few European settlers entered the region via the Cumberland Gap and the Ohio River after the French and Indian War, but they were subject to attack by the natives. Daniel Boone was among the few early settlers; he led a group of about 35 men from Virginia and helped start a settlement on the Kentucky River, in 1775. By 1776, with the start of the War for Independence, there were fewer than 200 European settlers in the area, which was still considered to be part of Virginia. During the War many of the natives allied themselves with the British and harassed the few local settlements.

In December, 1776, after the Declaration of Independence, the new American government of Virginia created Kentucky County, as part of Virginia, and organized a militia for the new County. A fort was built there during the last year of the war for defense against the British and their native allies. The Battle of Blue Licks, one of the last major battles of the War, was fought in Kentucky.

After the war, there was significant migration to Kentucky, largely by small tenant farmers from Western Pennsylvania, New Jersey, Virginia, Maryland and North Carolina who were seeking their own good farm land. And there were wealthier migrants who were looking to start new, large plantations. The area was divided into multiple counties, under Virginia, as the population grew. By 1784 the settlers were campaigning to establish the area as a new state of the union, and in 1792 the U.S. Congress accepted the Kentucky Constitution and admitted it as the 15th state.

Abraham Lincoln's grandfather had moved to Kentucky with his family as part of this early migration after the War. He was killed there in an attack by natives in 1786. Abraham Lincoln was born in central Kentucky in 1809, and lived there until his family moved to southern Indiana in 1816.

The Frazee Ancestors

Moses (II) Frazee, the son of Moses (I) Frazee, moved from Short Hills, New Jersey to Mason County, Kentucky after the end of the War, when he was about 20 years old. Like the other migrants to Kentucky, he was looking for land on which to farm. It was getting crowded in central New Jersey, and most of the good farm land had been taken. He married **Priscilla Morris** in Mason County in 1785. He and Priscilla lived there for several years, and it appears that at least eight of their 15 children were born in Mason County. Moses was on the tax list of the county in 1793. But the family soon moved north to Ohio.

I have not found information on **Priscilla Morris'** parents. There is no evidence that she was related to the Morris families in Pennsylvania who were the ancestors of Harriet Ellen Morris, or that she was related to the New Jersey Morris men who signed the Declaration of Independence.

The Morris Ancestors

Thomas Mills and **Martha Phillips** Mills, ancestors of Harriet Ellen Morris, moved to Mason County, in what became the state of Kentucky, in about 1785, from western Virginia/Pennsylvania. They came with their children, including **Ann Mills,** who was about ten years old. Mason County at that time was a very large county in the north central part of Kentucky, bordering the Ohio River. It initially covered almost one-fourth of Kentucky. The County was subsequently subdivided several times into a total of 19 counties today. Migrants to the area came by land and water. Some floated down the Ohio River on barges from near present-day Wheeling, West Virginia; others came by wagon on a trail that had been developed from Cumberland Gap to north central Kentucky. It was an attractive area for settlement because of its access to the Ohio River and the relatively flat land compared with the rugged land to the east.

Thomas and Martha raised their children in Mason County. Thomas Mills died there in February, 1799.

John Wilson, his wife **Lydia Amy Thatcher Wilson,** and their children moved to Mason County, Kentucky, from Redstone County, in western Pennsylvania, in about 1785. Their son **Amos** was about 15 years old at the time.

On June 22, 1791, **Amos Wilson** and **Ann Mills** obtained a marriage license in Mason County. On May 2, 1795, Amos and Ann Mills Wilson had a baby girl, named **Abigail Wilson,** mother of Harriet Ellen Morris, born in Mason County, in the new state of Kentucky.

John and Lydia Amy Wilson did not settle in Kentucky for long; shortly after 1795 they moved on to greener pastures in Ohio, as discussed below. And their son Amos and his wife Anna Mills Wilson and children also soon moved on, and became early settlers in Ohio.

It is likely that our ancestors in Kentucky built log cabins for shelter. The practice of building log houses had been brought to America by the Swedes who lived in New Netherland (in what is now Delaware), and by German immigrants, and became a common housing style for those who moved west of the Appalachian mountains. There was an ample supply of trees for logs, and the log house was easier and faster to construct than any frame style. Log houses could be built with almost no equipment except a good ax.

Settlement of Ohio

The early European history in Ohio was very similar to that of Kentucky. The British and French both lay claim to territory that really belonged to the Native Americans. The French and Indian War resulted in the end of the French activity in the area, as they ceded control of Ohio and the old Northwest to Great Britain. As with Kentucky, European settlement in what would become the state of Ohio proceeded slowly until the end of the War for Independence because of the continued threat of attacks by the natives. But even after the War, some natives, supported by the British, resisted American settlement. The natives and British were decisively defeated in the battle of Fallen Timbers in 1794, and the British thereafter withdrew their outposts from the Northwest, and the area became relatively safe for European settlers.

In the 1790s several land companies began promoting migration to the area. The Miami Company purchased a large tract of land (also called the Symmes Purchase) in the southwestern portion of Ohio, northeast of present-day Cincinnati, from the Continental Congress in 1788. The purchase included what is now Hamilton, Butler and Warren Counties. This company surveyed the area and began promoting migration to the area. Because of its location across the river from Mason County, Kentucky, several families from Mason County, including some of our ancestors, moved into this southwestern part of Ohio, where there seemed to be better farm land than in Kentucky. Many of the early settlers to this part of Ohio came from the mid-Atlantic states of Pennsylvania, New Jersey, and Maryland, and from Virginia and North Carolina, following the Ohio River.

Another important land company was the Connecticut Land Company, which was formed in the late 1700s to survey and encourage settlement in what was called the Connecticut Western Reserve. The Connecticut Western Reserve was located in Northeast Ohio with its hub being present-day Cleveland. The Connecticut Western Reserve was land which had been claimed by the Connecticut Colony in the Ohio territory. (Connecticut claimed a strip of land all the way to the Pacific Ocean, as its Western Reserve). With the creation of the United States, the individual states gave up their claims to the western lands in exchange for Federal assumption of their War debts. But Connecticut did not give up its claim to more than three million acres in

northeast Ohio, known as the Western Reserve. In 1796, Connecticut sold much of that land to investors, initially eight original purchasers, most of them from Suffield, Connecticut, who formed the Connecticut Land Company. However, Native Americans still claimed this area. Americans claimed title with the Greenville Treaty in 1795 and the Treaty of Fort Industry in 1805, although most Natives were not aware they were giving up their rights to the land. The west end of the Reserve included the 500,000 acre Firelands or "Sufferers Lands" which were reserved for residents of several New England towns destroyed by British-set fires during the War for Independence.

The Connecticut Land Company promoted the sale of farm land to residents of Connecticut and to a lesser extent in other parts of New England, and most of the early migrants to this northeast portion of Ohio came from Connecticut, where many of the residents had moved from the Massachusetts colonies. The settlement of the Western Reserve by New Englanders gave that part of Ohio an obvious cultural similarity to New England, compared with the southwest part of Ohio promoted by the Miami Land Company.

By 1801, Ohio's population numbered 45,000, and Congress determined that Ohio could begin the path to statehood. The residents convened a constitutional convention which copied provisions from other states, and they specifically outlawed slavery in the new state. On Feb 19, 1803, President Thomas Jefferson signed an act of Congress that approved Ohio's boundaries and constitution, and Ohio became the 17th State of the Union.

Ohio became a popular destination for Quakers looking for land, because of the state's prohibition of slavery (although the Constitution discriminated against African Americans by restricting voting rights to white males). Quakers who had migrated into the southern colonies were feeling unwelcome because of their opposition to slavery, and Ohio provided new opportunity to start over again in a "free" state.

The migration patterns into Ohio are reflected in the migration by our ancestors; our New England ancestors settled in the Western Reserve of northeast Ohio; our ancestors from New Jersey, Pennsylvania and western Virginia settled in southwest Ohio.

Smith Ancestors

Northeast Ohio - The Smith, Coudry, Cotton and Whitmore Families

In about 1807 **Samuel Smith** and his wife **Ruth Cole** moved their family from Connecticut to the Western Reserve area in northeast Ohio, and settled in Cuyahoga County, near the current city of Cleveland. Several other families from Middlesex County, Connecticut also moved to the Western Reserve about the same time, seeking new, fertile farm land.

Samuel died quite young, at age 48, on May 4, 1813, in Euclid, Ohio. He was buried at Nela Cemetery, East Cleveland, Ohio. His widow, Ruth Cole Smith, remarried in 1816 to John Murray.

John Fletcher Smith, born in 1799, was about 8 or 9 years old when they moved to Ohio. He and his eight brothers and sisters grew up on a farm there. He was in a farm accident at the age of 15, and suffered from these injuries the rest of his life. He married **Alcinda Coudry** in Cuyahoga County, Ohio, on April 20, 1824. They had ten children. John Fletcher worked as a music teacher for much of his life, and also managed a farm.

Their children included **Samuel Philander Smith,** father of Mary Smith, born July 15, 1825, in Cuyahoga County, Ohio.

Alcinda Coudry (also spelled Cowdery or Coudery) was born in 1803. I have not identified the names of her parents, but it appears that they moved from Chatham, Connecticut to the Western Reserve in the early 1800s. There were several Coudry families living in Chatham, near the Smith family, at the time of the Smith family move to Ohio. Coudry also was a family name in the Pilgrim Colony, having come from England.

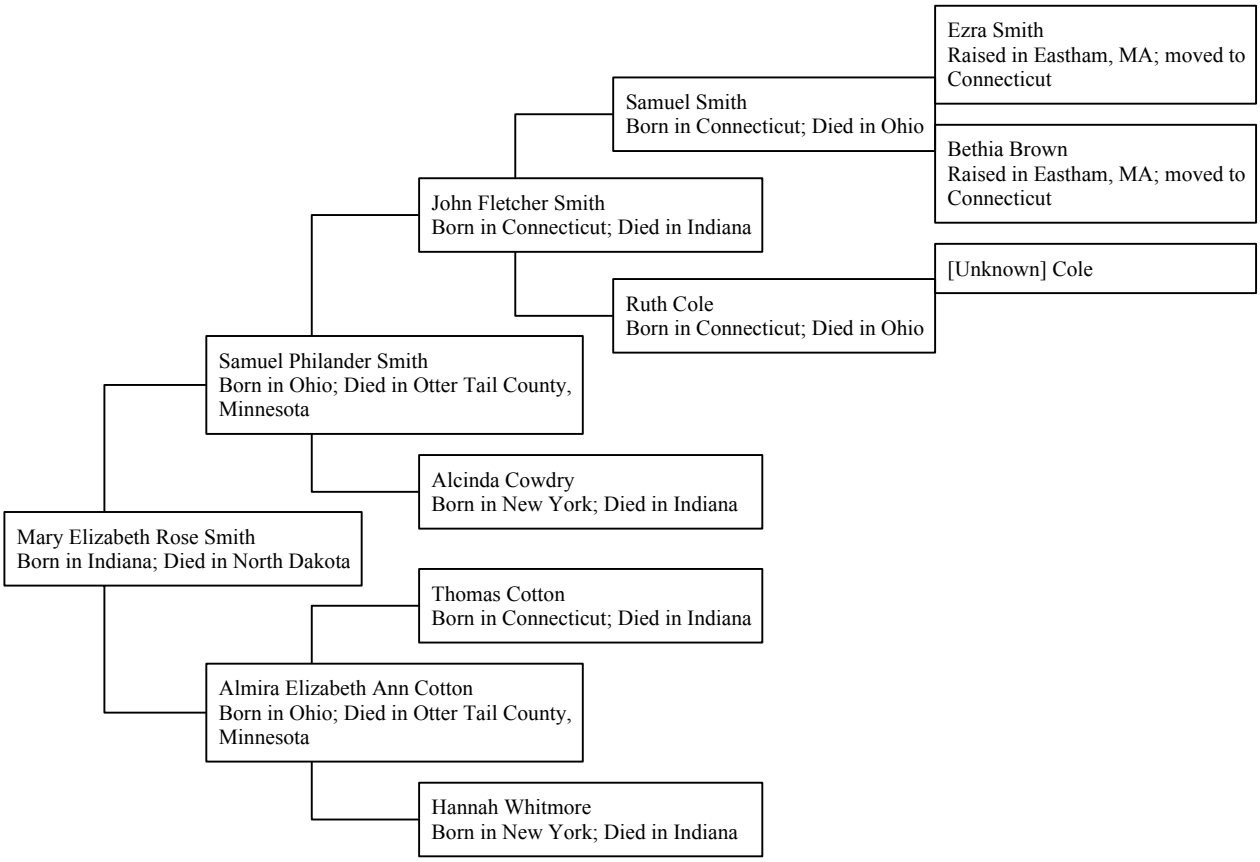
In the latter part of the 1830s, John Fletcher Smith and Alcinda moved their family to Elkhart County, Indiana, where we will meet them again in the next Chapter.

Thomas Cotton and his wife **Hannah Whitmore** came to the Western Reserve in Ohio from Connecticut in about 1824, with seven children: Sarah, Jane, James, Willard, Enos, Lydia, and Mary. Thomas was born in about 1787 in Connecticut. Hannah was born in about 1783 in New York. I have not identified the parents of Thomas Cotton or Hannah Whitmore.

Thomas and Hannah and children settled in Seneca County, Ohio, in the north-central part of the state. They had a small plot of land, and two head of cattle for family use. Thomas worked as a carpenter and joiner. In May 18, 1828 they had another daughter, **Almira Elizabeth Ann Cotton,** mother of Mary Smith. In about 1836, Thomas and Hannah and children moved to LaGrange County, Indiana, where we will meet them again in the next chapter.

The following genealogy chart shows some of Mary Smith's ancestors in Ohio.

Some of Mary Smith's Ancestors in Ohio, Indiana & Minnesota



Southwest Ohio - The Miami Land Company

Morris Ancestors

The Wilson, Mills and Morris Families

The Miami Land Company was promoting migration into southwestern Ohio, and word spread through Kentucky, Pennsylvania, Virginia and New Jersey about the fertile lands available in the Ohio territory. Several families who had already migrated to Kentucky decided to pursue this new opportunity, including our ancestors, the **Wilson, Mills,** and the Moses (II) Frazee families.

John and Lydia Amy Wilson moved to Ohio from Mason County, Kentucky. They were in southwest Ohio in the early 1800s, and settled in Miami County, Ohio, probably before 1810. (Unfortunately, the Census records for Ohio for 1800 and 1810 were destroyed, so it is more difficult to determine when our ancestors relocated in Ohio). Miami County was created in 1807, when it was separated from Montgomery County. Miami County is located just north of present-day Dayton, Ohio, about 25 miles north of Warren County. John and Lydia were living in Lost Creek Township of Miami County when the 1820 Census was taken. John Wilson died in 1823 in Miami County, at age 86, and Lydia Amy died there in 1837, at age 97. They were buried in a Baptist cemetery in Lost Creek Township, Miami, Ohio.

John Wilson's son, **Amos Wilson** and his wife **Ann Mills**, with their two children, including daughter **Abigail**, moved from Mason County, Kentucky to Warren County, Ohio in 1795 (before Ohio became a state). A year or two later he purchased 200 acres of land that he was to clear of timber before he could farm. Amos and his family were the first settlers in what would become Wilson Township in Clinton County, Ohio. (Clinton County was broken off from Warren County in 1810.) The story of Amos Wilson's attempt to farm in the wilderness of Ohio has been published in a History of Clinton County, presented below:

HISTORY OF CLINTON COUNTY.
WILSON TOWNSHIP.
BY R. B. PEELLE.
FOR a person who wishes to examine a subject fully, closely, carefully and truthfully, there is no portion so interesting as its genesis. Of history this is specially true. Given a reliable starting-point, and a few authentic data along the line of march, and it becomes a comparatively easy task for the historian to construct the narrative of the people or country he wishes to describe.

When we were assigned the pleasant task of writing a sketch of the early settlement and progress of the youngest of the thirteen fair daughters that compose the happy, peaceful, prosperous family of Clinton, we little thought to find evidence that within her borders was made the first improvement in our county. On the best of testimony we make the statement that as early as 1796 or 1797, while Ohio was still a part of the Northwest Territory, a family moved here, made permanent improvements, and, with little intermission, were residents here for more than half a century. A

biography of Amos Wilson, the father of the family, will be almost a history in itself of our township.

He was born in New Jersey April 7, 1770; moved with his parents to Kentucky in 1784, where he lived for seven years. On the 22d of June, 1791, he married Ann Mills. In 1795, he moved to Ohio, settling in Warren County, near Waynesville, where he lived for one or two years. In 1796 or 1797, he bought 200 acres of land of Joshua Carmen, situated in Taylor's Survey, No. 738. Placing his family of wife and two children on a sled drawn by one horse, and with two young men to clear a path through the dense, unbroken forest, he started to find his new purchase and make himself a home. His directions were to travel due northeast from the Deserted Camp till he had crossed Anderson's Prairie and entered the white oak timber. By the aid of a pocket compass, he traced his way, crossed the prairie, found the white oak timber, and, supposing he was on his own land, built a cabin and began a home. This was on what is now known as the Hinkson farm, in R. Eggleston's Survey, No. 886. As his arrival was too late in the season to clear the ground and plant a crop, he concluded to break a piece of the prairie near by for corn. He did so, doubting all the time about the venture being profitable, as there were many ponies grazing in the prairie, belonging to a band of Indians who were camped on the creek near where it is now crossed by the Cincinnati & Muskingum Valley Railroad. Mr. Wilson often related in after years that he never saw even the track of a pony on the land he had plowed; that some of the squaws and young Indians were constantly on the alert keeping the ponies away from his corn, so that in the autumn he gathered a good crop.

Finding that he was not on his own land, he moved onto the next survey, which afterward proved to be Lindsey's Survey, No. 732. The place chosen this time is now known as the Cyrus Reed farm, owned by Miss Martha Douglas. Here he built a house, planted an orchard and cleared several acres of land. What he called his "flax patch" -a lot containing from five to eight acres-which was "cleared smooth," has been allowed to grow up in timber again, much of it being now two feet and over in diameter. Here he remained until 1802 before discovering that he was again improving another's property, and not his own. In that year, Joshua Carmen came from Kentucky to look after the survey of land that he owned, bringing with him Mr. Wilson's brother-in-law, James Mills. When Mr. Wilson was told that he was not on his own land, he became so discouraged at the prospect of receiving no benefit from the large amount of hard labor he had performed, and having to begin anew, that he announced his intention of quitting the place and going back to the older settlements. Mr. Carmen persuaded him to give up the idea, and, as part compensation for his repeated failures, made him a present of fifty acres adjoining his original purchase, on the west side. This fifty acres is now owned by James Ritchie.

In 1802, we find Mr. Wilson on his own land, now owned by Alfred Coulter, with James Mills for a neighbor, on the south. Having made arrangements for "raising" their cabins on the same day, with the aid of help from Caesar's Creek and the Miami River, they "chose up," and did the work on a race, but so evenly were they divided, and so skillfully and willingly did each perform his task, that the two gangs of workmen met almost at the middle point in the path between the two cabins, each going to help the other.

In the year 1807, the first great sorrow of his life overtook him in the death of his wife. During the year, he was married a second time to Rachel James, with whom he lived till 1818, when she fell a victim to the " Dread Destroyer." His third wife was Mary Coulter, widow of William Coulter. In 1827, he built the first brick house in this part of the county. The house is still used as a dwelling, and is in a good state of preservation. Having his farm well improved, and the country becoming too thickly settled for an old pioneer to breathe freely, he sold his possessions to Solomon Madden, and moved to Delaware County, Ind., in the year 1839. The same year he was again bereft of his companion. In 1843, he was married to Eliza Dowden. Becoming dissatisfied with his surroundings in Indiana, he moved back to Ohio in 1843, and bought his old home place again, where he remained till 1854, when he again sold---this time to John G}. Coulter-and moved back to Delaware County, Ind., where he died October 27 in the same year, aged eighty-four years six months and twenty days.

One who knew him well says that "Amos Wilson was an honest, industrious and Christian man, a bright example, both in faith and works, to all with whom he came in contact." He brought up an interesting family of fifteen children of his own, and four step-children of Mary Coulter's. Of the nineteen children, sixteen married, and all but one were professors in some branch of the church. When married, he was unable to either read or write, but his first wife taught him both. He was a Baptist preacher for many years, and two of his sons, Benoni and William, followed him in that profession. At the time of the Campbell excitement, he joined that sect, but soon left it, went back, and died in the faith and practice of the Baptist Church. His name is remembered in the township by the creek that drains nearly half of its area being called Wilson's Creek. Again in the name of the township; the first book of record has on its title page, " Record of Wilson Township, Clinton County, Ohio; organized August 20, 1850; named in honor of Rev. Amos Wilson."

Of James Mills, mentioned above,[Note: this is our great-uncle, brother of Ann Mills] *it can well be said he was an honest, industrious, progressive farmer--one who was honored and respected by all who knew him. He lived on the farm where he first settled, and which still remains in the possession of his descendants, till his death.*

As noted in the above history, **Ann Mills** died in 1807, only 32 years of age. Daughter **Abigail Wilson** was 12 years old at the time. I have not found information on the cause of Ann Mills death. Childbirth was a common cause of death at the time, with about one maternal death for every 100 live births in the 1800s. But there also were many other deadly threats that are no longer common in this country. Yellow fever epidemics were common in hot summers in many parts of America. Cholera epidemics spread among the populations of many cities in the 1800s, including New York City; Columbus, Ohio; Baltimore, Maryland; Memphis, Tennessee; Philadelphia; and other cities. Smallpox was a continuing danger of a sudden outbreak. Diphtheria killed tens of thousands of Americans until treatments were found in the late 1800s. There were several deadly influenza epidemics in the 1800s. And then there were the slower killers, particularly “consumption” (tuberculosis). Of course there also was cancer, heart attacks, stroke, diabetes and

other killers that are still with us. The odds of being killed in an attack by native Americans was very small compared with those for "natural causes."

After Ann Mills' death Amos then married Rachel James. Rachel James was our great-aunt, a daughter of our ancestor William James, and a sister of ancestor Sarah James, who was a Frazee ancestor. William James had moved his family, including his daughter Rachel, to Warren County (from which Clinton County was created), six years earlier (see below).

Amos had a total of 15 children and at least four wives. He was a participant in the local Baptist Church; in 1803 he was listed as a lay leader of the Sugar Creek Baptist Church, and as noted above, was a Baptist preacher for many years.

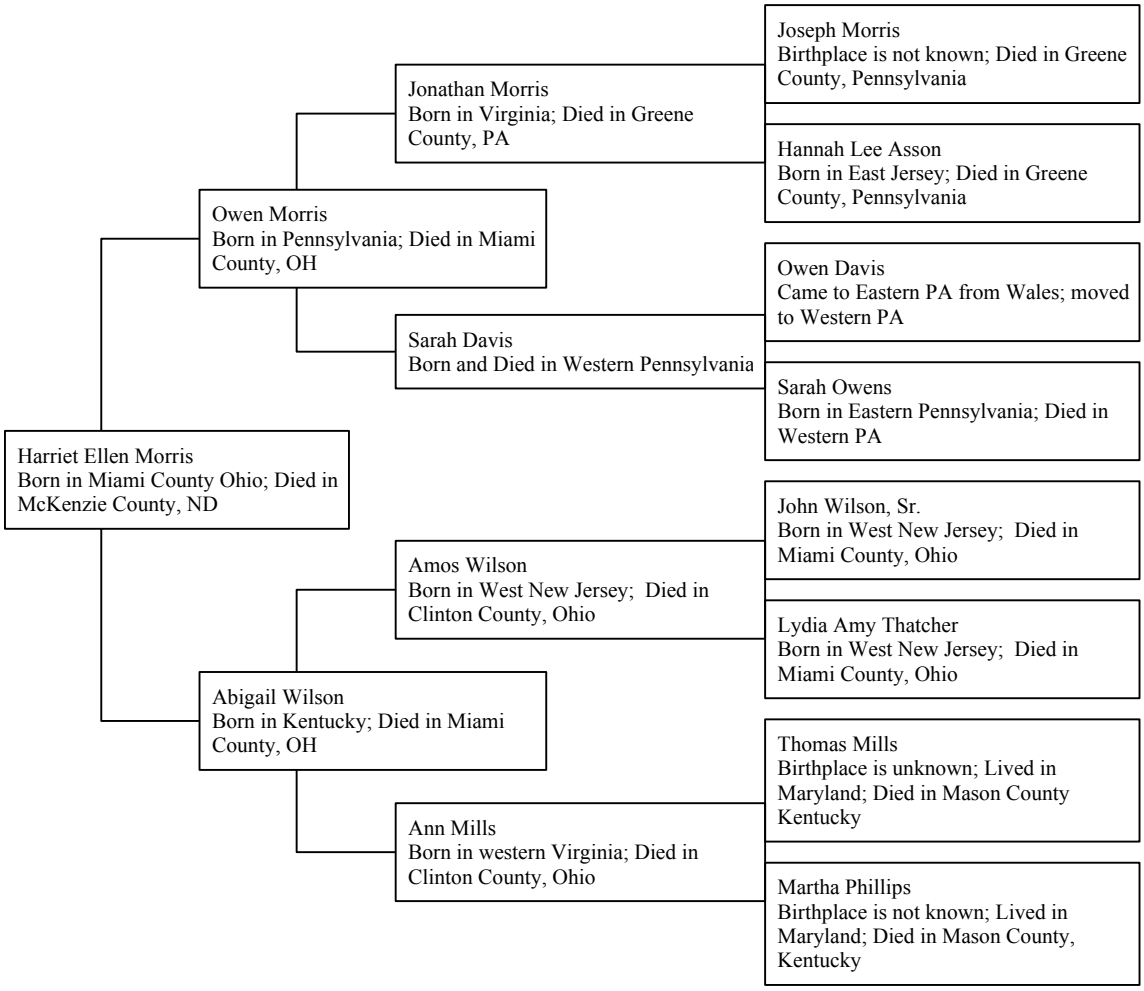
Owen Morris, father of Harriet Ellen Morris, moved from western Pennsylvania to Miami County, Ohio in the early 1800s, before 1813. In 1813 he would have been 30 years old. It appears that he moved directly to Miami County (or its predecessor Montgomery County), from his family home in western Pennsylvania. Family information indicates that he came to Ohio without other members of his family, but at least two brothers eventually migrated to Illinois at some point. Owen purchased a plot of land in what would become Lost Creek Township, and started farming.

Owen Morris met **Abigail Wilson**, daughter of Amos Wilson from Clinton County, which was some 25 miles to the south of Miami County. Owen and Abigail were married in 1813, in Miami County. Abigail was 18 when she was married. How did they meet? It is likely that Abigail spent time with her grandparents, John and Lydia Amy Wilson, after Abigail's mother died. Her grandparents lived near Owen Morris' farm in Lost Creek Township, Miami County.

Owen Morris and Abigail Wilson had eleven children between 1814 and 1842: Elizabeth, Ann, Owen David, Sarah, John, Letitia, Patty, Lucinda, Abigail, Elma, and Harriet Ellen. **Harriet Ellen** was a late surprise, born July 7, 1841, in Miami County, when her mother was 47 years old. By the 1850 Census, the oldest seven children had grown up and left home; Lucinda, Abigail, Elma and Harriet were still living on the farm with their parents. Owen Morris died on May 18, 1860, a couple of months before the taking of the 1860 Census. The Census records show Abigail and Harriet living on the Morris farm. All the other children had left home. Harriet was 18 years old and her mother Abigail was 65.

The following genealogy charts show some of Harriet Ellen Morris' ancestors in Ohio.

Harriet Ellen Morris' Ancestors in Ohio



Frazee Ancestors

The James, Wolcott, and Frazee Families

William James and his wife **Jane Williams** and their children moved from Virginia to Warren County, Ohio in 1801. William's mother, **Mary Hill James** also came with the family to Ohio. Their daughter **Sarah James** was 15 years old at the time of the move to Ohio. Their daughter Rachel was 25 years old, and became the second wife of ancestor Amos Wilson (a Morris ancestor), who lived in the same area (see above). William purchased land and began farming in northern Warren County.

William became seriously ill in 1803, and died in 1804, at the age of 54, only three years after coming to Warren County. He left behind his wife, eight children, with three under the age of 16, and his elderly mother. His Last Will left his farm of 180 acres to his four sons. His wife Jane received 80 acres, including the "mansion house", and she received all of his farm livestock, implements and goods. His four daughters, **Sarah**, Rachel, Ann, and Jane each received one feather bed and furniture. He also requested that his wife and children "pay particular attention to and amply provide for the support and comfort of my aged mother." At the time of his death he was still receiving payments from debtors in Virginia, probably from the people who purchased his property there. Jane Williams James continued to live in Warren County. She died there in 1834.

Moses Frazee II and Priscilla Morris and their several children moved from Mason County, Kentucky, to southwest Ohio, probably in the early 1800s. A local historian stated that they first lived in the Cincinnati area, and then moved to Miami County, Ohio, probably about 1812. They purchased a farm in Miami County, in what became Lost Creek Township (established in 1818). When Moses and Priscilla Frazee moved to Miami County, there was already a James Frazee living there, who was a founder of the County; it is likely that he was a cousin of Moses, who moved there from New Jersey. (Moses had two cousins named James Frazee, who were of the right age to migrate from New Jersey to Ohio.)

Moses and Priscilla had 15 children: Moses, Mary (Polly), Sarah, Thomas, Paul, Rebecca, David, Rachel, Newton, Jerusha, Susanna, Betsy, **Lewis D**., Phoebe and Priscilla. As noted previously, at least the first eight were born in Mason County, Kentucky, and some were born in Ohio before they moved to Miami County. It is likely that only the baby, Priscilla, was born in Miami County. **Lewis D. Frazee,** father of Moses R. Frazee, was born July 25, 1810, in southwestern Ohio.

In addition to farming, Moses (II) was a Baptist Minister at the Lost Creek Baptist Church, and later at the Casstown Baptist Church. A local historian wrote that Moses "labored earnestly to advance the cause of Christianity among the pioneer settlers of the community." Moses (II) and Priscilla died on their Miami farm. Priscilla died in 1839, and Moses died the following year, at the age of 79. They are both buried at the Lost Creek Cemetery, Miami County, Ohio.

Their son Lewis took over the operation of the farm from his parents. Their son David Frazee resided on a farm in Miami county until about 1851 when he moved to Clark county, Ohio. Their son Moses, Jr., "became a Baptist minister and died in middle life, while devoting his energies to that faith."

Lewis Frazee grew up on the family farm in Lost Creek Township, Miami County. At age 22, on January 31, 1833, he married **Rebecca Posey Wolcott**, daughter of John Hollinshead Wolcott and Sarah James Wolcott. (See below).

John Hollinshead Wolcott, who came from the Quaker family in New Jersey, moved from Burlington, New Jersey to Butler County, Ohio in 1807, at age 21. He then moved to nearby Warren County, Ohio in 1808. He was a farmer and fruit grower, and also worked as a surveyor. He served in the Ohio militia during the War of 1812.

John Hollinshead Wolcott married a neighbor, **Sarah James,** in Warren County, Ohio in 1813. John and Sarah had at least seven children from 1814 to 1825, including **Rebecca**, William, James, Benjamin, John, George, and Joseph. Son James died as an infant, and Joseph died at age six. Their first child, **Rebecca Posey Wolcott,** mother of Moses R. Frazee, was born in 1814 in Warren County. By 1820 the family had moved about 25 miles north to Miami County, Ohio, where the last three children were born. John cleared land and built a house on his farm. He also worked as the Miami county surveyor and had a nursery. In the 1860 U.S. Census, John lists his occupation as "farmer", and his real estate is valued at $7,800.

John Hollinshead Wolcott also served as a Justice of the Peace in Miami County. An interesting document from Miami County records shows a real estate transaction between Moses and Priscilla Frazee and their son Lewis Frazee, and John Wolcott is the official who authenticates the agreement, as the local Justice of the Peace. John Wolcott died in Miami County, Ohio in 1868 at the age of 82. His sons Benjamin and George took over parts of their father's farm.

Rebecca Posey Wolcott, John and Sarah Wolcott's daughter, married **Lewis Frazee** on January 31, 1833, in Miami County. Rebecca was 18 years old at the time. Lewis and Rebecca had seven children from 1834 to 1846: John, Jerusha Elizabeth, Dulcenia, **Moses R.**, Sarah, Morris and Priscilla, all born in Miami County. Priscilla died as an infant. Their son **Moses R. Frazee** was born December 5, 1838.

Lewis Frazee died on September 29, 1845, at only 35 years of age. His son Moses was not yet seven years old when his father died. I do not know the cause of Lewis Frazee's early demise. It appears that it was from some disease, probably one of the common killers of the time, rather than an accident.

A local historian wrote: "Lewis Frazee remained upon his farm until his death. He inherited property from his father who gave to each of his sons an equal amount of money. Mr.[Lewis] Frazee served as a Colonel of the militia and was in command on the old training days in Lost Creek, thus winning his title. He died at the age of thirty-five years, and his wife remained upon the old homestead for twenty years

thereafter. She then went to Champaign County, Ohio, where her death occurred in her eightieth year. Her eldest child was only twelve years of age at the time of her husband's death, but she managed to keep all of her children together, save one daughter, who went to live elsewhere, and lived to see all her family settled in life. After leaving the old homestead her sons operated it until it was purchased by Mr. Wilgus [who had married Dulcenia Frazee] on the first of January, 1863…. His wife [Dulcenia Frazee), was born on the old Frazee homestead February 20, 1837, in the old brick house which her grandfather had erected and which forms a part of the present home built by Mr. Wilgus in 1872."

It is noted above that one daughter went to live elsewhere. The daughter, Sarah, went to live with her grandparents, John and Sarah Wolcott, who lived a few miles away. At the time of the 1860 Census, Sarah Frazee was living with John and Sarah at their farm. She was 18 years old.

Rebecca Wolcott Frazee lived for 48 years after her husband's death; she died in neighboring Champaign County on October 18, 1893, at 79 years of age.

Moses R. Frazee grew up on the Frazee farm in Lost Creek Township, and was busy at an early age helping his mother and siblings on the farm. At the time of the 1860 Census, Moses, who was 21 at the time, was living on the farm with his mother, his older brother John, and his younger brother Morris. Moses and John listed their occupations as "farmer". Morris was listed as a farm laborer. In 1862, Moses Robinette was legally made the guardian of the estate of his younger brother, Morris Frazee, who was 18 years old at the time. Moses, who was then 23 years old, was sworn to discharge his duties faithfully and to make a "just account of the profits arising from the estate of said minor." Apparently some or all of the children of Lewis and Rebecca had inherited some portion of their parents' estate, while Morris was still a minor. It is likely that this occurred at the time their mother Rebecca moved off the farm to adjoining Champaign County. Morris was her youngest surviving child.

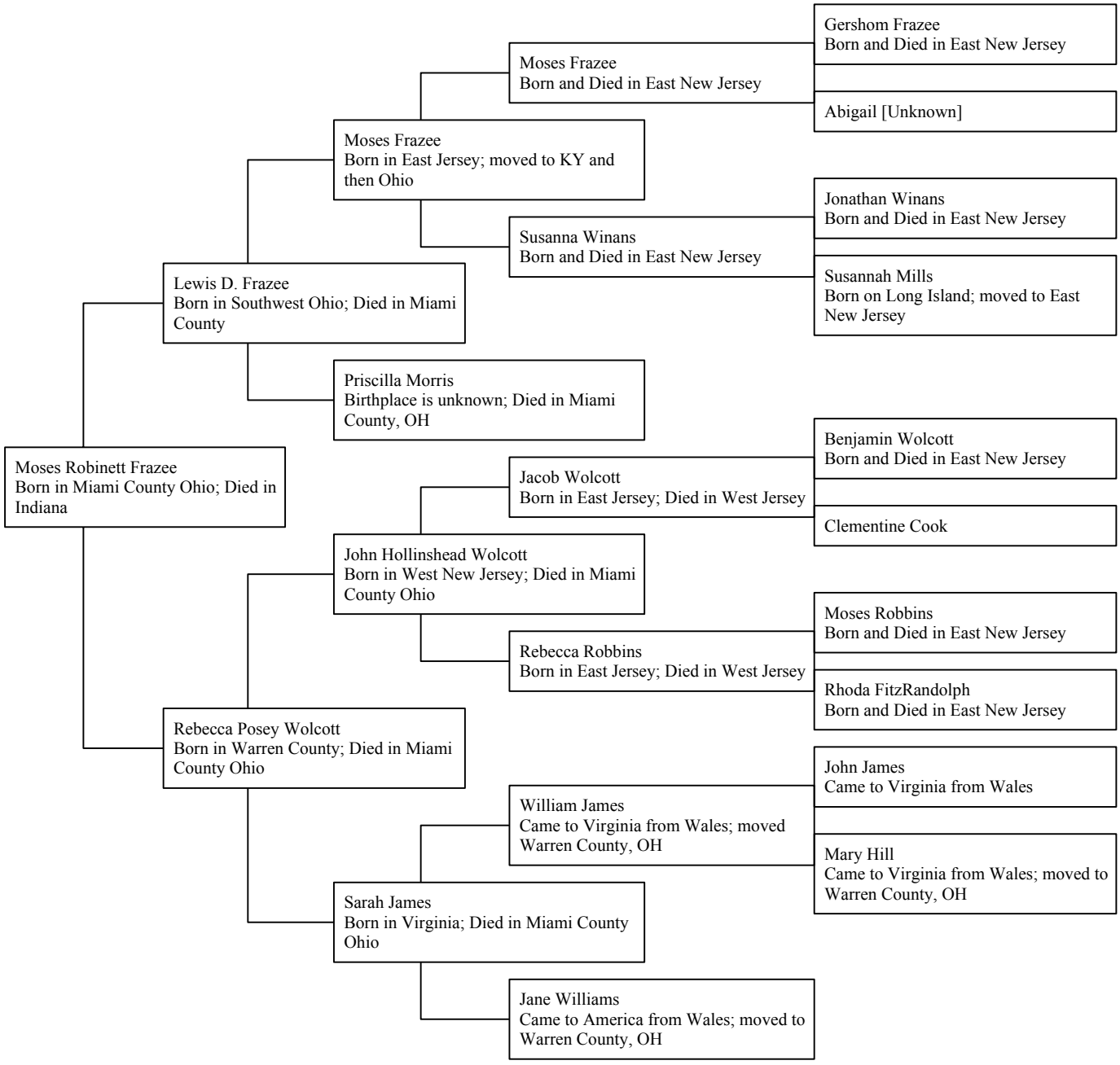
Moses R. Frazee met **Harriet Ellen Morris**, daughter of **Owen Morris** and **Abigail Wilson**, who lived nearby in Lost Creek Township. They were married on December 2, 1861, during the first year of the Civil War (or the Southern Rebellion). This was about 18 months after her father, Owen Morris, had died. Harriet's mother, Abigail Wilson Morris, died February 9, 1875, at age 80.

In 1863, Moses R. and his siblings sold the Frazee farm to their brother-in-law, John Wilgus, who had married their sister, Dulcinia Frazee. At some time after Moses and his siblings sold the farm, he and Harriet moved to the City of Piqua, in Miami County. Piqua was a small but rapidly growing town, primarily because two railroad lines had recently been laid through the town. The Dayton and Michigan line ran north-south through the town, connecting them to Dayton and points south, and to Michigan in the north. The line was completed in 1856. That same year, an east-west line through the town was completed by the Pittsburgh, Cincinnati and St. Louis Company (which later became the Pennsylvania Line). This latter line became a major east-west rail line through central Ohio and to points west.

Moses R. got a job working on the railroad; it is not known what type of work he did initially, but by 1880 he was working as a conductor. **Harriet Ellen Morris** and **Moses R. Frazee** continued to live in the town of Piqua, Miami County, where they had three of their four children: Alice Clyde, Anna Dulcenia, and **Morris Clifford. Morris Clifford** was the third child, born June 3, 1869.

In the early 1870s, Moses R. and Harriet E. Frazee and their three children moved west, to Urbana, Illinois, where we will meet them again in the next Chapter.

Moses R. Frazee's Ancestors in Ohio



Farming in the 1800s

Farming methods and tools in the first decades of the 1800s had not improved much from the prior century. The cast iron plow was invented in 1797 and was in general use by the early 1800s. This significantly eased the job of plowing, but it did not work well in the stickier loam soils of the midwest. In 1836, a fellow named John Deere, who had recently moved from Vermont to Illinois, was so frustrated with his cast iron plow in the loam of Illinois that he invented the steel plow. The steel plow quickly became a hit in the midwest, and John Deere became a manufacturer of plows rather than a farmer. But these early plows were still pulled by oxen or horses, or mules, with the farmer walking behind trying to guide the walking plow across the field. A farmer with 100 acres to plow had to walk about 800 miles, man-handling his walking plow.

In 1790 the scythe and cradle was invented, for cutting hay and grain, which permitted faster harvesting, but it required even greater physical strength on the part of the user than the old hand sickle. For the farm wife, a major event occurred in 1810 with the introduction of food preservation by canning, using glass jars.

By the mid 1800s, some significant new farm equipment was invented that began to change the nature of agriculture. The grain binder was invented in 1850; the corn planter in 1853; the 2-horse straddle row cultivator in 1856; the seed drill in 1867; and the cream separator in 1870. But most farmers did not have use of this new equipment until the latter part of the 1800s or early 1900s, either because of lack of funds to purchase the new equipment, or lack of availability in remote areas of the country.

Map of Ohio

The map on the next page shows the location of the town of Piqua, in Miami County, Ohio, where Moses R. Frazee and family lived. Warren County and Clinton County are just to the south of Dayton. Mason County, Kentucky is to the southeast of Cincinnati, west of Portsmouth, along the Ohio River. The map also shows Cleveland, Ohio, near where the Smith and Coudry families lived, before moving on to northern Indiana, near Elkhart.


Coldwater
Sturgis
Elkhart
Toledo
Mentor
Ashtab
Goshen
Bryan
Auburn
Bowling Green
Defiance
Lorain
Cleveland
Warsaw
Fort Wayne
Fostoria
Ottawa
Findlay
Tiffin
Elyria
Strongsville
Akron
Stow
Wadsworth
Huntington
Van Wert
Lima
Ashland
Massillon
Canton
Alliance
Peru
Kokomo
Marion
Mansfield
Sidney
Ohio
Indiana
Muncie
Piqua
Newark
Carmel
Anderson
Springfield
Columbus
Zanesville
Wheeling
Richmond
Dayton
Reynoldsburg
Danville
Indianapolis
Grove City
Lancaster
Plainfield
Greenwood
Miamisburg
Xenia
Logan
Nelsonville
Marietta
Franklin
Hamilton
Mason
Parkersburg
Bloomington
Columbus
Chillicothe
Athens
Cincinnati
Florence
Bedford
Portsmouth
Gallipolis
Ashland
St Albans
West Virginia
Louisville
Cynthiana
Huntington
Charleston
Frankfort

Chapter 14: Moving Again, to Indiana and Illinois

Early Settlement of Indiana

The early history of Indiana is similar to that of Ohio. It was part of the Northwest Territory that the British claimed after their victory over France in the French and Indian War. The British had agreed to cede this territory to the new American government as part of the Revolutionary War treaty in 1783, but the British continued to maintain outposts in the area and encouraged the natives to attack American settlements. After the War of 1812 ended in 1814, the British finally withdrew from the area, and the native attacks subsided, resulting in a rapid increase in migration to the region. Michigan was separated from the Indiana territory in 1805, although the border between the two territories was not clearly defined.

Most of the early settlers to Indiana settled in the southern part of the state, because they came down the Ohio River on flatboats. By 1816 there were enough residents in the territory to qualify as a state, and Indiana was established as the 19th state of the Union in 1816.

By the 1820s the northern parts of Indiana were starting to be settled, with pioneers moving west from northern Ohio. Elkhart County was established in 1830, in the northeastern part of the state, bordering Michigan, and in 1832 LaGrange County was established by breaking off the eastern part of Elkhart County.

John Fletcher Smith and his wife **Alcinda Coudry Smith**, and their eight children moved from Ohio to Elkhart County, Indiana in the latter part of the 1830s, and were among the pioneer settlers in Middlebury Township, on the eastern edge of the county. There were still a large number of Potawatomi Indians in the area; some of them were cultivating land along the Little Elkhart River in the township. A local historian wrote the following about Elkhart County: "Of all the lands acquired by the last treaty, in point of soil and situation, none hold out more alluring prospects to the industrious, than does this point…The unexampled healthiness of climate, and fertility of soil surpassed by none in the government. The country is just opening its eyes on this delightful prospect."

By 1839 there were still only twelve families living at the settlement of Middlebury, in the Township, with a few farms being established and farm houses being built in the countryside. A little red frame schoolhouse went up in about 1836 in the northwest part of town. A Mr. S.L. Hixon sowed the first wheat in the fall of 1837 between the Little Elkhart and the Michigan line. It was in this community that **John Fletcher Smith**, his wife **Alcinda** and their children cleared land, built a house, and started a farm.

Their son **Samuel Philander Smith,** father of Mary Smith, was 15 years old in 1840 as they were establishing their home in Indiana. He had two older siblings, and five younger brothers and sisters at the time. And then later in 1840, Alcinda gave birth to twins, William H. H., and Helen L. Smith.

John Fletcher and Alcinda Smith spent the rest of their lives in Elkhart County, Indiana.

In about 1836, **Thomas Cotton** and his wife **Hannah Whitmore** and their children moved from Ohio to LaGrange County, Indiana, just to the east of Elkhart County. Their daughter **Almira**, was about 8 years old at the time. Thomas worked as a carpenter. Thomas and Hannah's oldest sons, James and Willard, also purchased property in the County. Thomas became ill and died in the spring of 1850, at the age of 63.

In 1849, **Samuel Philander Smith** married **Almira Cotton** in LaGrange County, when he was 23 years old, and Almira was 21. In March, 1850, they had their first child, John W. Smith, shortly before Almira's father died. After her father's death, her mother Hannah moved in with Samuel and Almira, along with six year old William Cotton, who apparently was the son of Almira's older brother. So Samuel and Almira suddenly found themselves with a bigger family than they bargained for. But tragedy struck again on August 18, 1850, when their baby son died at a little over four months old.

Samuel was trying to start a farm in LaGrange County, as well as supporting his family and in-laws. In 1852, they had a second son, named Alva. The family grew again in 1855 with the birth of John Fletcher Smith, named for his grandfather. And then there was Eli, born in 1858; and William Henry Harrison, born in 1861. Some time in this period from 1850 to 1861, the family moved from LaGrange County to LaPorte County, Indiana, located west of South Bend, and bordering Michigan, where they lived near the town of Wanatah.

In 1861, with the outbreak of the Civil War, Almira's young nephew, William Cotton, enlisted in the Indiana Infantry and was assigned to the 9th Regiment, Company F. He was now 17 years old, having lived with Samuel and his aunt Almira since he was six. The 9th Regiment was organized for three-year enlistments in August 1861 and men were mustered in on September 5, 1861. They were sent by train to Cheat Mountain in Virginia (now in West Virginia), where the Union armies successfully drove General Robert E. Lee's army out of the mountains of Virginia. But there were repeated skirmishes in the area as both Confederate and Union supporters attempted to control the region. (That part of Virginia soon separated from Virginia and the new state of West Virginia was established by Congress in 1863, as part of the Union.) On January 30, 1862, William Cotton was killed in action at Fetterton, a small town near Grafton, (now West Virginia). William is interred in a National Cemetery in Grafton along with hundreds of other Civil War dead. (I visited his grave in 2012 while on other business in Grafton.)

In September, 1862, **Samuel P. Smith** joined Company I of the 87th Regiment, Indiana Infantry, for a three-year enlistment. Samuel was already 37 years old, with a wife, and four children under 11 years of age, including a toddler. We can only speculate on what motivated him to volunteer to join the infantry as a Private, at age 37. He may have felt the need to carry on with what William Cotton had started, although William's death certainly emphasized the dangers. Or maybe he just felt strongly about supporting the Union cause. Or maybe there was a great deal of peer

pressure to join up; Indiana was ranked first in contributions of soldiers to the Union forces, with over 57% of its eligible men serving in the war.

Each Regiment consisted for ten companies, with approximately 100 soldiers in each Company. Samuel's Regiment almost immediately was assigned to pursue a Confederate force to Crab Orchard, Kentucky, where they were engaged in the Battle of Perryville, KY, which was part of the Confederate attempt to obtain control of Kentucky. It was fought primarily on October 8, and was one of the bloodiest battles of the War, as a percentage of the soldiers killed or wounded. The Union suffered 845 killed and 2851 wounded. The rebels had 510 killed and 2635 wounded. It was considered a strategic victory for the Union as the Confederate army retreated, and the Union retained control of Kentucky for the remainder of the Rebellion. Samuel's Regiment was not heavily involved in the battle, and the records indicate that his company did not have any killed in the battle, but it had to be a frightening introduction to warfare for Samuel P. Smith.

After about two weeks in Kentucky, his Regiment marched to Nashville, Tennessee and was assigned duty to defend key positions on the Tennessee River, at South Tunnel, Pilot Knob and Gallatin, Tennessee until late November. These were critical locations for defending supply lines for the Union forces between Louisville and Nashville. His unit then was guarding fords on the Cumberland River through December. On January 1, 1863, Samuel was honorably discharged. I have not found any additional information about why he was discharged after about three and one-half months of duty, but such early discharges were quite common. It is possible that he had become ill, which was a common problem, particularly in the winter months. The hardships of forced marches and living in tents in the winter in the mountains of Tennessee could certainly cause even a much younger man to crumble physically. See Chapter 16 below for more information about how the men of Samuel's Company I fared during the war.

So Samuel was back home in early 1863, and he must have been warmly welcomed. In 1864 Almira gave birth to twin girls, **Mary Elizabeth Rose,** Esther's grandmother, and Rachel Rebecca. In 1867 another son was born, named George Thomas. Unfortunately, Mary's twin sister, Rachel, died in 1867, at about two and one-half years of age, and about four months after baby George was born.

In the 1870s, Samuel and Almira and children packed up and moved west. It was getting a little crowded in Indiana, and time to move to a new frontier. Smith family records indicate that they first moved to Wisconsin for a short period of time, and then moved on to Otter Tail County, Minnesota in about 1876, where we will meet them again.

Settling Illinois

After the British ceded the Northwest Territory to the United States after the War for Independence, the Indiana Territory was established in 1800, which included what is now Illinois. On February 3, 1809 Illinois became its own territory, and included what is now Wisconsin as well as the part of Minnesota east of the Mississippi. On

April 18, 1818, Congress passed an Enabling Act allowing Illinois to become a state, although there were fewer inhabitants than prescribed by the Ordinance of 1787. A constitution was adopted in August of that year, and on December 3, 1818, Illinois came into the union as the twenty-first state, with its more limited boundaries as it exists today. When Illinois became a state the adopted constitution prohibited slavery, but the issue remained hotly debated until a convention to legalize slavery, primarily promoted by land owners in the southern part of the state, resulted in a vote in 1824 to continue to prohibit slavery.

The early history of Illinois was very similar to that of Indiana, with most of the early settlements locating in the southern part of the state, and most of these settlers came from the earlier southern states, including the Carolinas and Tennessee and Kentucky. Battles with Natives continued until after the end of the War of 1812. As in Ohio and Indiana, the natives found themselves unable to stop the influx of migrants or to compete with the firepower of the Europeans. And as in all the previous opportunities during the prior 200 years as the Europeans spread west from the Atlantic Ocean, the native tribes were not able to put aside their differences among themselves to focus on their common enemy. The concept of "owning" land, and buying and selling land was completely without meaning to the natives, and the Europeans continued to "buy" enormous tracts of land in exchange for a few pieces of clothing, or some guns, or knives, or jewelry.

After statehood, Illinois grew faster, still primarily in the south, with its access to the Ohio River. This changed dramatically, however, with the creation of the Erie Canal in 1825. Chicago and Galena, the two most important towns in the north, with access to the Great Lakes, were very small prior to 1825, but grew rapidly afterwards, when boats were able to travel from the east all the way to Chicago. Chicago was incorporated as a town in 1833 with a population of 350. When it obtained a city charter four years later, the population had grown to 4,000. Between 1850 and 1870, Chicago's Irish population grew from 6,096 to over 400,000. These immigrants flocked to America to escape the potato famine that struck Ireland in the mid 1840s.

By 1860, Illinois had grown to house 300,000 families and was the fourth most populous state in the union. The southern part of the state continued to be primarily agricultural, while the northern part was rapidly urbanizing and industrializing. This resulted in a polarization of politics in the two parts of the state.

In May of 1860, Abraham Lincoln was nominated for the presidency at the Republican National Convention held in Chicago. The Republican Party was newly established, and represented the progressives of the country who opposed slavery; they also opposed the power of the wealthy elite. (Oh how the Republican party has changed!) Lincoln was opposed by Stephen Douglas, a northern Democrat, by John Bell of the Constitutional Union Party, and by John C. Breckenridge of the Southern Democratic Party. Lincoln won the election with almost no southern votes. And his election quickly led to a string of secessions by southern states.

The town of Urbana was founded in 1833 as the county seat of new Champaign County. Located about 100 miles southwest of Chicago, Champaign County was settled relatively late because it was inaccessible by boat. In 1854 the Illinois Central

Railroad reached Urbana, and suddenly the place was booming. A new community built up around a railroad station, and in April 1860, this community of West Urbana was renamed Champaign. Which is why today if you fly into Champaign-Urbana, the pilot is likely to tell you that you are about to land in Champagne, which I'm told is better than landing in water.

Also Urbana continues to be proud that in 1854, Abraham Lincoln delivered a speech against slavery at the courthouse in Urbana, and he visited Urbana frequently as a lawyer on the 8th judicial circuit.

In 1868 the University of Illinois opened its doors for business in Urbana, as one of the "land-grant" universities established under the Land Grant Act of 1862 which set aside public lands that could be used to fund colleges of agriculture and mechanical arts in each of the states. Urbana gradually became a college town rather than a railroad town.

Frazees Move to Illinois

Sometime in the 1870s, probably by 1873, **Moses R. Frazee** and his wife **Harriet Ellen Morris Frazee** and their three children moved west to Indiana and/or Illinois. Family records indicate that between about 1873 and 1900 they lived in several cities in Illinois and at least two cities in Indiana. Moses was working as a conductor on a railroad, and apparently moved frequently as his job required. It appears they lived in or near Chicago at one point, as well as several other cities in Illinois, and they lived for a while in Lafayette, Indiana. It is reported that daughter Alice attended grade school and high school in Lafayette; if that is correct, they lived in Lafayette before moving to Urbana, Illinois where they were living at the time of the 1880 Census. **Morris Clifford** was about four years old at the time of the move west from Ohio It is likely that they loaded all their belongings on a train and headed west. By 1873, there were a large number of passenger trains crossing these upper mid-west states.

In the 1880s, Urbana had two major rail lines running through the area. Urbana was on a major north-south line that ran south from Chicago to St. Louis or on south to Memphis and New Orleans. And there was an east-west line that ran from Columbus, Ohio (and connecting to all points east), west through Indianapolis, and on to Decatur and Springfield, Illinois (and connecting to all points west). I do not know which lines Moses R. worked on as a conductor.

In 1875, Harriet Ellen gave birth to their fourth child, Lewis Blakely. In 1880, when the US Census was taken in Urbana, Moses R. was 41 years old, Harriet was 38, Alice was 16, Anna was 13, Morris was 11, and Lewis was 5.

And Then Back to Indiana

At some time before 1900, Moses R. and Harriet, and their two daughters, Alice and Anna, moved to Floyd County, Indiana. In the 1900 Census, they were living on a farm in New Albany Township, which is right on the Kentucky border, across the Ohio River from Louisville, Kentucky. He was renting the farm. It is likely that Moses retired from his railroad job, and moved to this farm. He probably had traveled through the area on trains running from Chicago to Louisville. It appears that even in 1900 the County was quite heavily populated, with over 30,000 people. In 2000 it had over 70,000 and had become a suburb of Louisville. Family oral history indicates that it was a lovely farm, near the banks of the Ohio River.

The 1900 Census lists Moses R. at age 61, Harriet at age 58, Alice at age 36, and Anna at age 33. Alice lists her occupation as working in millinery. Anna was a stenographer. Sons Morris and Blakely were not with them. Family records show that Alice later worked as manager of the Bell Telephone Company office in New Albany, Indiana.

It may be that Moses R. Frazee was in declining health at the time, because he died on October 24, 1905, at only 66 years of age.

By 1900 **Morris Clifford Frazee** was 31 years old, and apparently was not caught by the Census taker. Based on family oral history, he was working as a telegrapher for a railroad company in Chicago or Minneapolis-St.Paul at the time. A few years later he decided he wanted to take up farming in the west, and headed for North Dakota, where we will meet him again.

In 1910, after Morris Clifford moved to McKenzie County, Anna moved there, where she filed a claim on a homestead. Her mother, Harriet Ellen, and her sister Alice followed later, to join Morris Clifford and Anna, and we will meet them again there in a later Chapter.

Chapter 15: Finley Families in Northern New York

While the ancestors of Moses R. Frazee, Harriet Ellen Morris, and Mary Elizabeth Rose Smith were moving west, the ancestors of Andrew Theodore Finley came into the United States, crossing the St. Lawrence River from Canada into northern New York state.

Robert Finley, grandfather of A. Theodore Finley, was born in Ireland in 1804, and migrated to Canada, probably about 1825. It is not known whether he came from the Catholic or Protestant part of Ireland, but it is likely that he was part of the large migration from Catholic Ireland starting about 1815. (At least one researcher says he came from Cork, Ireland, which is in the far south of Ireland.) Many of these Catholic Irish immigrants came into Canada because Britain subsidized transportation from Ireland to Canada, making it much cheaper to go to Canada than to U. S. ports. He migrated from Ireland well before the great potato famine that started in 1845.

It is likely that he lived in Canada for a few years before crossing the St. Lawrence river into upper New York state. St. Lawrence County borders the Canadian Province of Ontario, and is about 60 miles south of Ottawa, Canada, and about the same distance northeast of Lake Ontario, on the St. Lawrence River. It is closer to Ottawa and Montreal, Canada than to any major U.S. city. At that time there was a substantial flow of immigrants across the Canadian border into the United States. St. Lawrence county was still largely a wilderness area in the 1820s. The County was not easily accessible from the rest of the United States, because of the Adirandack Mountains to the south and east, but it was easily accessible from the north, from Canada. It was only a short ride up the St. Lawrence River from Montreal, and the English-speaking city of Ottawa also was nearby by water.

Many of the early settlers in the county arrived from Canada. The population began to expand in the 1810s and 1820s as Irish immigrants came into Canada. Many of them headed south to work on the Erie Canal that was being built between Albany, New York and Lake Erie. Many of those immigrants had been farmers in Ireland, and some of them decided to stay and attempt to farm in St. Lawrence County. It was not a great place to farm; it was considered to be best for sheep. But to the Irish farmers, it looked like good land compared to what they had come from in Ireland.

In about 1828 Robert Finley married a young woman named **Mary** [last name unknown; some researchers claim her last name was Phillips]. She was born in Canada in about 1804. I have not found information about her parents or country of origin.

Robert and Mary Finley settled in St. Lawrence County, New York, some time before 1829, and he eventually was able to obtain a farm of 165 acres. Robert had received some education, and was able to read and write, but Mary was illiterate, according to Census reports. They first settled in DeKalb Township, in the northwestern part of the County, and later moved to adjoining Macomb Township, which was some 15 miles from the St. Lawrence River and the Canadian border.

They had seven children: **Andrew (**father of Andrew Theodore Finley), Levina, Robert, Jr., George, Angela, Rodney, and Alvin. Andrew was the oldest child, born in New York in 1829. (I will refer to Esther's grandfather as Theodore Finley, here, to avoid confusion with his father, Andrew.)

Robert seemed to be successful at farming, and by 1870, at age 66, he was relatively well-to-do, with real estate and personal property valued at over $7000, which was more than most of his neighbors. By 1870, all of Robert and Mary's children had left home, except Rodney, who had just married, and apparently was taking over the operation of the family farm from his father. Robert and his wife Mary died in St. Lawrence County in the 1870s.

Andrew Finley, father of Theodore Finley, was still living at home with his parents at age 21, and helping his father on the farm. He could not read or write. He married **Anna [unknown]** in about 1853, when he was 24 and she was 22. Anna was born in Canada in 1831, but I have not found information on her parents.

Shortly after their marriage, it appears that they moved to Wisconsin where he apparently planned to make a life as a farmer. While in Wisconsin they had two sons, Edgar, born in 1855, and Elias, born in 1856. For unknown reasons they gave up on their venture in Wisconsin, and returned to St. Lawrence County, New York in about 1857. In 1858 they had a third son, Andrew Theodore, born in St. Lawrence County. At least one researcher claims that there was a fourth son, named Enos, born in 1861, but I have not been able to verify that.

At some point between about 1860 and 1865, disaster struck the family. The exact nature of the disaster is not known, but the consequences were that the family was split up. It is most likely that Anna died in the early to mid 1860s, but I have not yet found any record of this. (Theodore Finley told his children that he was an orphan, so it is likely that his mother died.) In any case, some time in the early to mid 1860s the three sons, Edgar, Elias and Theodore, had been placed in three separate "foster homes", or more likely they were assigned to these farm families as indentured servants and were obligated to work as farm hands for the three families who had taken them in. (In the 1870 Census, there also was a nine year old boy living with another farm family in the area, named Enos Finley, who may have been a fourth son.)

Meanwhile their father, Andrew Finley, enlisted as a Private in Company B, 193rd Infantry Regiment, New York State Militia, to join the Union soldiers fighting in the Civil War. He enlisted on February 24, 1865, when the Confederacy was in its dying days as the Union army laid siege to Richmond, Virginia. The war ended less than two months later, when General Lee surrendered on April 9, 1865. It is not known whether Andrew ever saw any action in the war in Virginia. He was mustered out on January 18, 1866 at Harper's Ferry, West Virginia. Two of Andrew's younger brothers, Rodney and Alvin had served with the New York Militia in the Civil War, earlier in the War.

Andrew returned to St. Lawrence County where he worked as a farm laborer, but he did not take responsibility for his sons. In addition to Andrew, the boys' grandparents, Robert and Mary Finley, lived in the county, along with several of the boys' uncles and aunts. Their uncle George, who was 31 years old in 1870, lived nearby, and so did their uncle Robert, who was 36 years old in 1870. I have not found any good explanation as to why these young boys were placed in foster homes rather than being cared for by their father or grandparents or other relatives.

Andrew Finley remarried in 1870. He married a woman named Laura Seymour who appeared to have had at least two children of her own when they were married. There also were two other children in the household in the 1870 Census: P. Sheridan Finley, age five, and Estella M. Finley, age three. It is not known whether these two youngsters were Andrew's children, or who was their mother. They might have been Andrew's children (and brother and sister of Theodore Finley) but I have not been able to confirm that. In the 1880 Census, Andrew and Laura had two children living with them: Phillip H. Finley, age 15, and Stelly M. Finley, age 13, who may be the same people as the P. Sheridan and Estella M in the 1870 Census. It appears that Andrew and his second wife Laura had at least one child together, a daughter named Mary, born in 1871. She would have been a half-sister to Theodore Finley.

The Three Sons

In the 1870 Census, Theodore was twelve years old and was living with a family on a farm located in a neighboring township from where his brothers were living with other farmers. He was using the name of Theodore. He was living with Luther and Laura Partridge, who had a five year old son and a one year old daughter. There also was a 17 year old girl working as a "domestic servant" who was living with the family. It is not difficult to imagine that Theodore spent most his time doing chores on the farm, but the family told the Census taker that Theodore had spent some time at school during the past year, and that he could read, but not write.

His next older brother, Elias, was living with the Jeremiah Ames family; they had four small children. Elias was then 14 years old and his occupation was listed as "works on farm".

His oldest brother, Edgar, was living with the William Harvey family; they had three young children. Edgar was 15 years old, and he was listed as a "Farm hand".

Theodore decided to leave St. Lawrence County and head west for a new life in about 1877, when he was 19 years old. Several dairy farmers from St. Lawrence County had decided to move to Otter Tail County, Minnesota, where they expected to homestead land and reestablish their dairy farms on better soil. It is likely that Theodore was invited to go with one of more of these families to help them settle in their new farms, or was invited to join a family that had already moved to Otter Tail County. In any case, he made it to Otter Tail County, Minnesota, where we will meet him again in the next chapter.

About the time that Theodore left St. Lawrence County, his oldest brother, Edgar, got married. He married his first cousin, Almena Finley, who was the daughter of his

father's brother, Robert Finley, Jr. They had a daughter named Nellie in 1878 or 1879. In 1880 or 1881, he and his little family set off to join his younger brother in Otter Tail County, where we will meet them again in the next chapter.

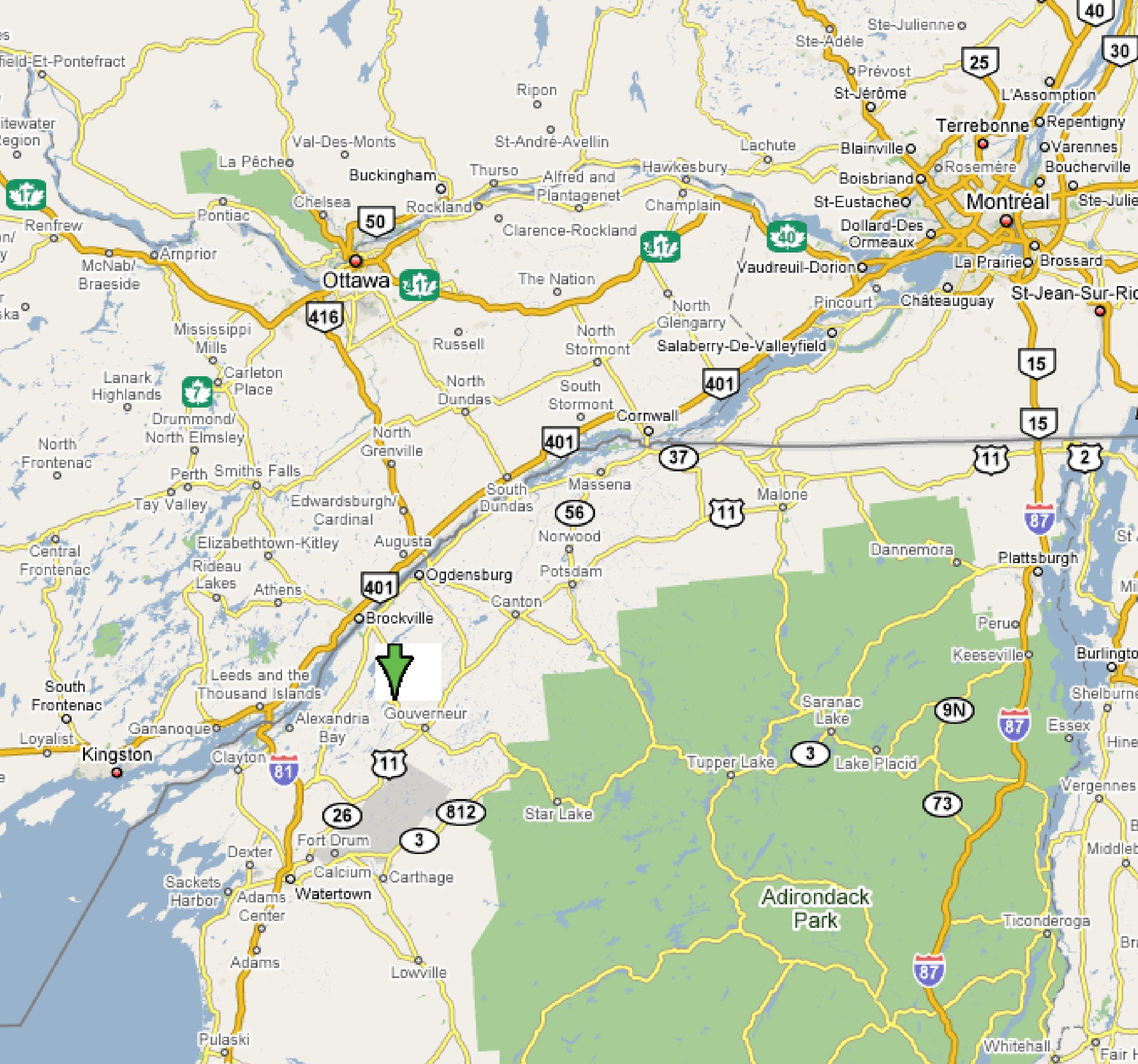
Theodore's other brother, Elias, who was two years older than Theodore, was living in the St. Lawrence County Poorhouse in 1880. He was 23 years old; he had been unemployed for over a year; and he could not read or write. I have not been able to find any further reference to Elias Finley after the 1880 Census.

It is not known how much Theodore Finley knew about his family in St. Lawrence County. It is possible that he was not in touch with his father or his grandparents, but it seems highly unlikely that he was not aware of their existence a few miles away from where he grew up. It is clear that he maintained contact with his brother Edgar, and that they corresponded after Theodore left for Minnesota, and it is clear that they both knew of their uncle Robert and his family in St. Lawrence County.

Theodore did not tell his grandchildren anything about his family in New York. And his grandchildren were not even aware that he had a brother who had lived almost next door to him in Otter Tail County, Minnesota. If his daughters knew about his family, they didn't pass it along to their children. Apparently he preferred to forget about the father who had abandoned him, and the grandparents who had failed to rescue him.

Map of St. Lawrence County

The map on the next page shows St. Lawrence County in the area around the arrow in the lower center of the map, bordering the St. Lawrence River. Note Ottawa and Montreal, Canada nearby.



Ste-Julienne
Ste-Adèle
Prévost
St-Jérôme
L'Assomption
Repentigny
Terrebonne
Blainville
Varennes
Rosemère
Boucherville
Boisbriand
St-Eustache
Montréal
Dollard-Des Ormeaux
La Prairie
Brossard
Vaudreuil-Dorion
Châteauguay
Pincourt
St-Jean-Sur-Ric
Salaberry-De-Valleyfield
Ripon
St-André-Avellin
Lachute
Val-Des-Monts
La Pêche
Buckingham
Thurso
Alfred and Plantagenet
Hawkesbury
Champlain
Chelsea
Rockland
Clarence-Rockland
Pontiac
Renfrew
Arnprior
McNab/ Braeside
Ottawa
The Nation
North Glengarry
Russell
North Stormont
Mississippi Mills
Carleton Place
Lanark Highlands
North Dundas
South Stormont
Cornwall
Drummond/ North Elmsley
North Grenville
North Frontenac
Perth
Smiths Falls
Tay Valley
Edwardsburgh/ Cardinal
South Dundas
Massena
Malone
Norwood
Augusta
Elizabethtown-Kitley
Central Frontenac
Rideau Lakes
Athens
Ogdensburg
Potsdam
Dannemora
Plattsburgh
Canton
Brockville
Peru
Keeseville
Leeds and the Thousand Islands
South Frontenac
Gouverneur
Saranac Lake
Alexandria Bay
Gananoque
Loyalist
Kingston
Clayton
Essex
Tupper Lake
Lake Placid
Star Lake
Fort Drum
Dexter
Calcium
Carthage
Sackets Harbor
Adams Center
Watertown
Adirondack Park
Ticonderoga
Adams
Lowville
Pulaski
Whitehall
40
30
25
50
17
40
416
7
401
15
37
11
2
56
87
9N
3
81
26
812
73

Chapter 16: Civil War - Our Ancestors' Roles

When the Civil War broke out in 1861, after the election of Abraham Lincoln as President, Samuel Smith was 36 years old, with a wife and three young children, and with no known military experience. He was not a good candidate to go to war. His oldest son was only nine years old. But as noted in an earlier chapter, Samuel enlisted in the Indiana Infantry as a Private, and served for a bit less than four months as part of Union forces in Kentucky and Tennessee before being discharged honorably. Below is a summary of how the men of Samuel's Regiment fared in the war.

The only ancestor who was of prime military age in the early 1860s was Moses R. Frazee, who was 23 years old when the southern promoters and defenders of slavery initiated the Southern Rebellion, as it was generally called in Ohio. Moses was married that winter of 1861, and apparently had no interest in leaving his family to join the Ohio militia. I have not found any evidence that he participated in the militia in any way.

As noted in the previous chapter, Andrew Finley, father of A. Theodore Finley, enlisted in the New York militia in 1865, even though he was already 36 years old. Because the war was nearing its end when he enlisted, it is likely that he saw little or no action in the war.

It is estimated that over 620,000 soldiers died on both sides during the civil war, in battle as well as from disease, accidents, sunstroke and other causes. The Union armies lost over 110,000 killed in battle, and over 250,000 who died from disease and other causes. By comparison, the Americans suffered only 4,435 fatalities in the War for Independence.

The experience of Company I, 87th Regiment, Indiana Infantry, in which Samuel P. Smith served, provides some insight into the life of soldiers in the Union army. Company I included 65 privates who were mustered in on September 12, 1862, for three-year enlistments. Of these initial enlistees, only 13 were still with the Company when they were mustered out in June 1865, at the end of the war. Eighteen of the initial 65 were discharged by the end of 1863, probably primarily due to illness or other health problems. Five deserted. Eighteen died, mainly due to disease. And nine were transferred to other units.

The first discharges began in December, 1862. By the end of January, 1863, eleven of the 65 had been discharged, and four had deserted. By January 1, 1863, when Samuel Smith was discharged, four men in his Company had died, and two more died in the following month. The other nine Companies of the Regiment had similar attrition, with many discharges and deaths in the first year. For those who survived and persevered with the Regiment to the end of the war, they were involved in several major battles; they marched hundreds of miles; they endured horrible weather conditions while marching, and living outdoors; they fought in Kentucky, Tennessee, Georgia, South Carolina and North Carolina.

The Regiment suffered the most casualties during the Battle of Chickamauga, in southeastern Tennessee and northwestern Georgia, on September 19 and 20, 1863. The Union army lost 1,657 killed, 9,756 wounded, and 4,757 captured or missing. Total casualties on both sides were over 34,600, the second largest casualty numbers in the war, second only to Gettysburg. This was a battle that should have been won easily by the Union army under General Rosecrans, who had over twice as many men under his command as did the southern General Bragg. But the Union army was badly defeated due to inept orders by commanders.

General Rosecrans had dithered in moving against Bragg for several months at the time when the Confederate armies were heavily engaged at Gettysburg in the costly and disastrous attack by General Lee, and in defending Vicksburg with was captured by the Union army under General Grant. Both of these Confederate disasters climaxed on July 4, 1863. Rosecrans failure to act gave time for Bragg to reinforce his troops from those reassigned from Vicksburg and other positions. After this defeat at Chickamauga, General Rosecrans was removed, and General Grant was promoted to have overall command of the Union armies from the Alleghanies to the Mississippi River. Grant was able to recover control of the Chattanooga area, eastern Tennessee, and northern Georgia, before he was promoted to General-in-Chief for all Union armies. General Sherman assumed command of the forces which included the 87th Indiana Infantry Regiment.

Several members of the Regiment were captured during the war, and some died in Confederate prisons. Members of the Regiment became part of General Sherman's army as they captured Atlanta, and some were part of his march to the sea, at Savannah, Georgia, and then north toward Virginia in the spring of 1865. The war ended in April 1865 with the surrender of Lee to General Grant's forces.

At the time of the Civil War, none of our ancestors was living in or near the rebellious states, or near where any battles of the war took place. So it appears that none of our relatives, other than Samuel Smith and his family, and Andrew Finley and his family, was directly impacted by the war. Of course, most Americans suffered to some extent by the enormous loss of life and treasure in the war, and most areas of the north contributed troops, war materials, and money to sustain the Union effort.

The Underground Railroad

Some communities in the north also played an important role before and during the war as participants in the so-called Underground Railroad. Prior to the war the "railroad" was an illegal, secretive, but very active informal organization that helped runaway slaves escape from the south and make it to safe places in the northeast United States, or out of the country and into Canada. Before the war, it was illegal in the north to harbor or assist runaway slaves, as a result of the Fugitive Slave Act passed by Congress, which was an effort to appease the southern slave-holding states. But many northerners ignored the Law and participated in running the "railroad".

Greene County, Pennsylvania, where our Morris ancestors lived, was a major stop on the railroad, sheltering and assisting escapees who made their way through the Appalachian mountains from the south. And Miami County, Ohio, where our Frazee ancestors and their families lived, also was active in maintaining the "railroad", assisting those runaways moving up from the deep south. Wherever there were concentrations of Quakers there was likely to be people active in the underground railroad. It has been estimated that over 100,000 slaves were able to escape slavery in the south prior to the Civil War.

With the outbreak of war, the northern states stopped enforcing the Fugitive Slave Act to return runaway slaves, and many communities in the north provided shelter and assistance to runaways as the southern slave owners began to lose their ability to control the slaves, and the number of runaways increased. Unfortunately there were all too many cases of northerners capturing runaways and taking them back south and selling them for whatever they could get.

White Supremacy in the North Leading up to the Civil War

There is often a perception among residents of northern states of America that white supremacy was a problem in the south; that northerners were more enlightened. Unfortunately, white supremacy was officially promoted and legalized in many northern states and by the US Government starting in the early decades of the new nation. Prior to the end of the Civil War, African Americans living in many states in the north were not given the same legal rights as their white neighbors.

When the United States was established, free African American men had the same rights as whites, keeping in mind that in most states only property owners could vote. But free black men could serve on juries and work in any trade or business. But free blacks gradually lost their rights in several northern states. New Jersey took the black vote away in 1807; and in 1818, Connecticut took it away from black men who had not voted previously. In 1821, New York took away property requirements for white men to vote, but kept them for blacks; this meant that only a tiny percentage of black men could vote in that state. In 1838, Pennsylvania took the vote away entirely. The only states in which free black men never lost the right to vote were Maine, New Hampshire, Vermont and Massachusetts.

In Ohio, even though the state Constitution prohibited slavery, it deprived blacks of the right to vote, to hold public office, and to testify against whites in court. And Ohio laws required that all blacks carry a certificate proving their free status. Illinois had severe restrictions on free blacks entering the state, and Indiana legally barred them altogether.

The efforts to bring more democracy to America during Andrew Jackson's administration actually worked to promote and legalize white supremacy. In the Jackson Administration, white working class people who previously did not have voting rights and were largely kept out of political life, were given voting rights. But African Americans, Native Americans, and all women, were excluded. They were second class citizens. But then the Supreme Court made the ultimate insult, by ruling

in the Dread Scott case in 1857 that Blacks were not even American citizens. These government actions reinforced common prejudices that blacks were inferior or even sub-human. This government-supported prejudice even in the north made it easier for people to defend slavery, and to support segregation and discrimination.

But many white northerners believed deeply that slavery and discrimination based on color of the skin was fundamentally wrong, and they risked their reputations and in some cases their lives to end slavery and the legal restrictions on the rights of Blacks.

Chapter 17: On to Otter Tail County, Minnesota

That portion of Minnesota located east of the Mississippi River was part of the Northwest Territory, and became part of a US territory after the War for Independence. The portion of Minnesota west of the Mississippi theoretically belonged to Spain and then to France, until it was purchased by the United States in 1803, as part of the Louisiana Purchase. Of course, the real "owners" were the Native Americans.

Early Minnesota history before about 1850 is really the history of two major Native American tribes, the Dakota (Sioux) and the Ojibwe (Chippewa). The Dakota dominated the southwestern part of what became Minnesota, and the Ojibwe dominated the northeast part. Intertribal fighting between the Ojibwe and the Dakota had a long history.

In 1838, an agreement with chiefs of the Dakota tribe opened some of the lands east of the Mississippi River to private ownership by white settlers. By 1839, some five hundred non-native persons lived in the area. In 1851, the Dakota signed the treaty of Traverse des Sioux. With this treaty, the lands west of the Mississippi River were "purchased" from the Dakota and the area opened for settlement the following year. Unfortunately the US government failed to make the promised payments to the Dakota, and many natives were facing starvation. This led to a sudden, violent attack on settlers in the southeastern part of the state in August, 1862, which set in motion a violent killing spree by the Dakota, the military, and the settlers.

The conflict lasted for only about a month, but there was a large loss of life on both sides. About 500 immigrants were killed, resulting in demands that the natives be removed from the region. After hanging 38 Dakota men, many others were exiled to reservations in what is now South Dakota and Nebraska. Once again, the natives were overwhelmed and moved out.

The Minnesota Territory was established in 1849, and it became the 32nd state of the union in 1858. Settlement was relatively slow in the first years of statehood, and the Dakota uprising in 1862 discouraged new settlers. But with the end of the Civil War in 1865, there was a spurt of activity, with major new logging ventures, railroad building, and a rapid increase in immigration to the state.

Otter Tail County was established in March 1858 by a legislative act, but it was not organized until 1868. The county is located in the west central part of the state, about 180 miles northwest of Minneapolis. The original county seat was Ottertail City, but in 1872 the county seat was moved to Fergus Falls. In 1870, the population of the county was about 2,000. At that time the principal languages spoken in the county were Norwegian, Swedish, German, and English. At the time of its early settlement, about two-thirds of the county was forested and one-third was native prairie. Most of the early towns were built along the railroad lines that came through the county. There were not any navigable rivers for water transportation in the county.

Western township was established in 1873, after settlers began acquiring property there. It is located in the far southwest corner of the county. In 1874 the township had about two hundred people, and about 1000 acres of sod had been broken for farming. Some of the early settlers in the Township came from St. Lawrence County, New York, where they were dairy farmers, and they brought good dairy cattle with them. The Fergus Falls Advocate, in its issue of June 17, 1874, says: "Already quite an amount of golden butter and delicious cheese is manufactured there, and in less than two years Western will boast a cheese factory and a butter factory second in appointments and facilities to none in this or any other state."

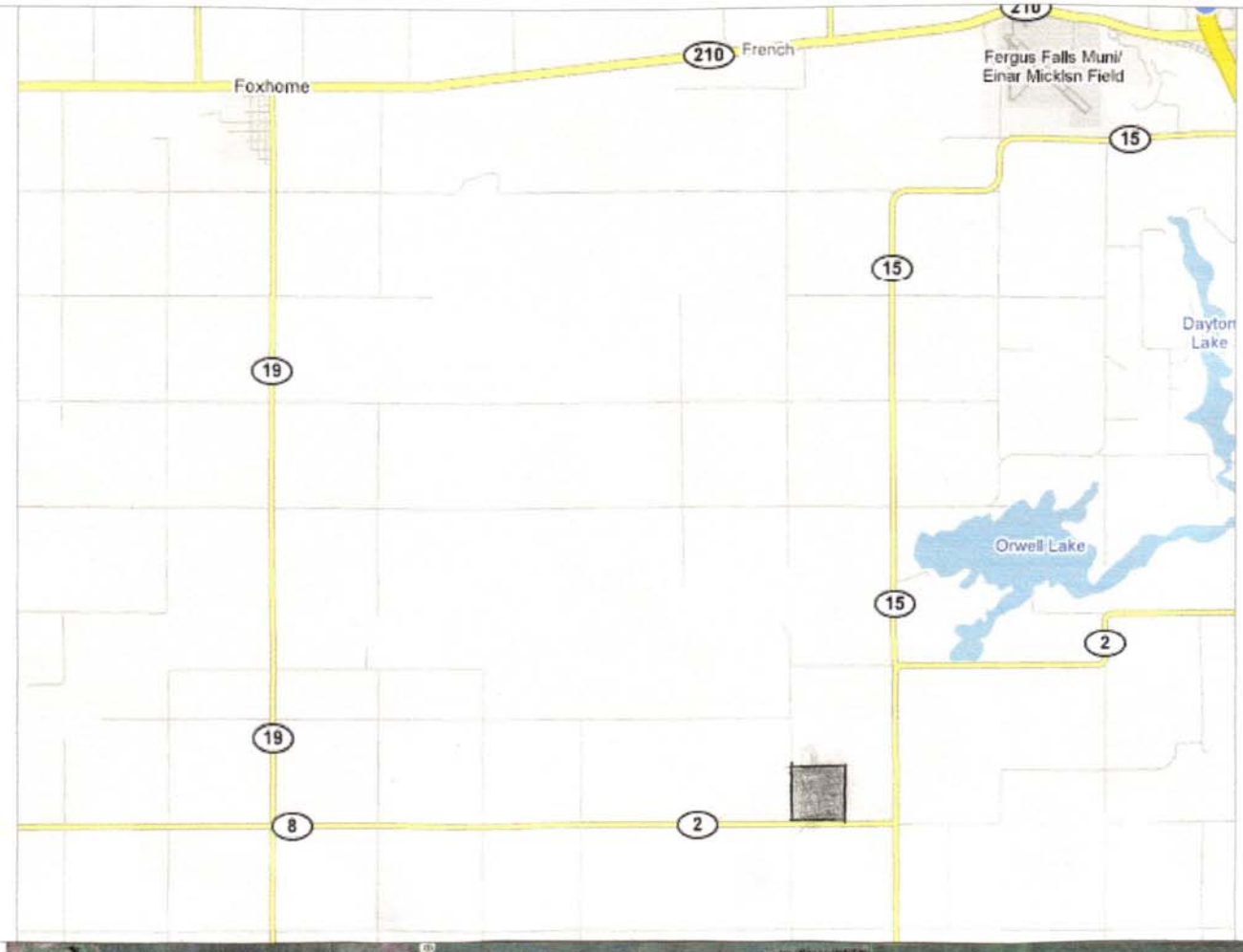
At least part of Western Township was still open for Homestead claims, in which homesteaders could stake a claim to a quarter section of land (160 acres). The Homestead Act was passed in 1862 and became effective on January 1, 1863. It provided that US citizens could get title to 160 acres of public land if they built a house on it, lived on it, and farmed at least ten acres, for five years. Settlers who wished to homestead would go to the local Land Office, determine which quarter sections were still available, select the best available parcel they could find, and then file a claim. After completing their five years, they would request a deed from the local Land Office, which would (sometimes) verify that the requirements had been met and record the deed. The Land Office would then send the paperwork to Washington, DC, and the President would "sign" an official document giving ownership of the land.

The Homestead Act had been passed in 1862 after the Republicans under President Lincoln's leadership had taken control of Congress and the White House. There had been many efforts during the preceding 30 years or more to enact such legislation, but the southern members of Congress, or southern Presidents, had always blocked it. Southern politicians opposed the homesteading idea; they did not want a bunch of small independent farms competing with their large plantations worked by slaves. Such small farmers would not be strong supporters of slavery. When the southern states seceded from the Union in 1860 and 1861, it was finally possible for Congress to enact this legislation, as well as several other important pieces of legislation that the southerners had been blocking. (The southern withdrawal from the Union resulted in some major benefits for the rest of the country!!)

Samuel Philander Smith and his wife **Almira Cotton Smith**, and their six children moved to Otter Tail County, Minnesota in about 1876, and settled in Western Township. Their daughter **Mary Elizabeth Rose** was 12 years old in 1876, and their oldest son, Alva, was already 23 years old. Samuel made a Homestead claim on 160 acres, and he and his four oldest sons set to work to build a house and barn, break sod, and plant crops. Samuel P. Smith was one of the original land holders in the Township. The following page shows the location of his homestead on a current map of the area, as well as a view of the farm as it now looks from a satellite image.

Samuel P. Smith's Homestead, Otter Tail County, Minnesota

His claim is the darkened square near the bottom of the current map of the area, southwest of Fergus Falls. His farm as it now looks is shown in the center of the satellite image.



Western Township is on the eastern edge of the Red River Valley, which is the flat, rich soil left by the remains of the huge Glacial Lake Agassiz. But Samuel Smiths' farm was just to the east of the Valley, where the soil was more sandy, and there were more lakes, ponds and "prairie potholes". As shown on the satellite image, the farm had several ponds or prairie potholes on it, which reduced the amount of land available for crops. Today, the part of the farm with the potholes is a designated Waterfowl Reproduction Area.

Just down the road from the Smith farm was the farm of William Wilkinson and his wife and children. William was Almira Cotton Smith's nephew; the son of her sister Mary Cotton. Mary moved to Otter Tail County about the same time as Samuel and Almira moved there, and she brought with her at least some of her children by her first husband, Norman Wilkinson, who had died several years earlier. William Wilkinson had made a Homestead claim on his 160 farm in Western Township. He was 27 years old in 1876, and he also was named as one of the original land holders in the Township.

Mary Cotton Robinson (Robinson was her second husband's name) lived nearby on another farm in Western Township, with her daughter Eliza and son-in-law Michael Shortall.

In 1880, when the US Census was taken, **Samuel** and **Almira** still had all their children living on the farm. Alva was 28 years old, John Fletcher was 24, and Eli was 21; they all listed their occupation as "farming". William H.H. was 18, and his occupation was "farm hand". **Mary Elizabeth Rose** was 15; and baby George was now 13. None of the sons had married at that time.

A few farms away from the Smith farm was a farmer named Thomas Robert, living with his wife and kids. He had a "farm laborer" working for him and living on the farm, by the name of **Theodore Finley** (Esther's grandfather). The Census report lists his age as 20, and his place of birth as New York. (He was actually 22 at the time.)

In about 1880 or 1881, Theodore Finley's older brother Edgar moved to Otter Tail County with his wife Almena and daughter Nellie. Theodore apparently had informed him of opportunities to homestead on good land in the area. Edgar found some land in Elizabeth Township, just north of Fergus Falls, and made a Homestead claim on 38.74 acres, which apparently was all that was still available for homesteading in the area. His homestead was located just north of Long Lake. He and his family were among the first settlers in the township.

Soon after, Theodore acquired some land just down the road from his brother's place, but it was not a Homestead acquisition; he apparently purchased it from a previous owner. And then Alva Smith, the oldest son of Samuel and Almira Smith from Western Township, also acquired some land nearby (also, not a Homestead claim). Alva was married in 1887 to a 17 year old woman whose parents came from Germany.

The three of them built houses and barns, and started breaking sod. It is likely that they helped each other raising houses and barns, and Alva's brothers probably helped out also.

About this time, Theodore began courting Mary Smith who had now become a young woman, and they were married in 1885, when Mary was 20, and Theodore was 27. They settled into their new house (or shack) on his land. On May 11, 1887, **Pearl May Finley** was born. In 1895, their daughter Irene was born, and in 1898, Malon Milton was born.

Except for the Finleys and Smiths, almost all of the neighbors in Elizabeth Township were immigrants from Germany. And those few not from Germany were from Norway or Sweden.

When the 1900 Census was taken, Andrew T. Finley and his wife Mary E., were living on an adjoining farm to the Alva Smith farm. Mr. Finley was now using the name Andrew T. rather than Theodore. Maybe he was not concerned that anyone there would know his father. Andrew T. and his wife Mary had three children, Pearl M., age 13 years old, Irene A., five years old, and Malon M., two years old. Malon died in about 1901. Theodore reported that he was born in 1860, rather than the correct year of 1858. He may have been making himself two years younger, so he would be only five years older than his wife, or he may not have known his correct birth year.

Just one farm away from the Alva Smith farm was Edgar Finley's farm, with his wife Almena, and five children. Their oldest daughter, Nellie, had already grown up and left home. They had two sons and three daughters living at home. Also living with them was Almena's father, who apparently had moved from New York state and was living with the family in 1900. As mentioned in the previous chapter, Almena's father was Robert Finley, the uncle of Theodore and Edgar. So Theodore Finley had his brother Edgar, his first cousin (Edgar's wife), his uncle Robert, and five nieces and nephews living within a mile or so from him in Otter Tail County! A little surprising for someone who claimed to be an orphan and raised by foster parents.

Alva Smith and his wife Matilda now had five children.

Farming in Minnesota in the late 1800s was still primarily done with human and animal power. Horses were the primary source of power to pull farm equipment, but some farmers used oxen for heavier work such as plowing. In 1855, the first self-propelled steam engine was developed for farm use, but it was not until the 1890s that the steam powered tractor became widely available, and even then it was used primarily for plowing large fields and running threshing machines. It was too heavy and too dangerous to be used for most farm work; it was so heavy that it would become mired in mud unless the ground was very dry, and there was always the danger of an explosion of the steam boiler, likely resulting in fatalities for anyone nearby. Most of the work on the farm was still done by horse, mule or ox, or by hand. And typical small farmers could not afford a steam powered tractor. If they were lucky they might have a neighbor who could afford a steam powered tractor

and threshing machine, and the surrounding farmers would work together with that owner as a threshing crew to thrash their grain.

On May 18, 1898, Samuel Smith's wife **Almira Elizabeth Ann Cotton** died at the age of 69. Samuel moved in with Alva at his farm in Elizabeth Township, and continued to live with his son and his family until his death on October 26, 1909, at age 83. Samuel and Almira are buried in a church cemetery in Western Township, Otter Tail County, along with their grandchild, Malon Milton Finley.

Samuel Smith's son William H.H. had taken over his father's farm in Western Township. And Samuel's son John F. was a veterinarian surgeon, working in Otter Tail County. His son Eli was working as a laborer, and living with his wife and children in Fergus Falls. Eli and his wife already had five children, including twins, Orlando and Olive. The Smiths, with their deep English heritage, found themselves surrounded by Germans, Norwegians, and Swedes in Otter Tail County. John married a Norwegian woman; William married a Swede; Alva married a German; and Eli married a Norwegian. That English blood was being mixed.

By the late 1800s, Otter Tail County was virtually overrun with our relatives. There was a sizable tribe of Smiths. There were several Wilkinsons and Shorthalls, the Cotton descendants. And there were two Finley families. As I was growing up in Otter Tail County in the 1940s and 50s, I had no idea how many of my relatives had helped settle the county. My grandmother, Pearl, had been there. My great grandparents, Theodore and Mary Finley had been there. My great, great grandparents, Samuel and Almira Smith had been there. My great aunt Irene had been there. My great, great uncle Edgar Finley had been there. My great, great, great uncle Robert Finley had been there. Several great, great uncle Smiths had been there. My great, great, great Aunt Mary Cotton had been there. And a whole boat load of cousins had been there, and several were still there.

By the turn of the century, **Pearl May Finley** was 13 and completing her education, and a few years later she took a job in Fergus Falls.

In 1907, **Andrew Theodore Finley** and his wife **Mary Smith Finley**, and their two daughters, **Pearl** and Irene, left Minnesota for a new, and probably more difficult, life in McKenzie County, North Dakota, where we will meet them again in the next Chapter. It appears from the records that Theodore's brother Edgar purchased Theodore's farm from him when he left.

At the same time, Mary Smith's brother, Eli Smith, also moved with his wife and children to McKenzie County, where we will meet them again in the next chapter.

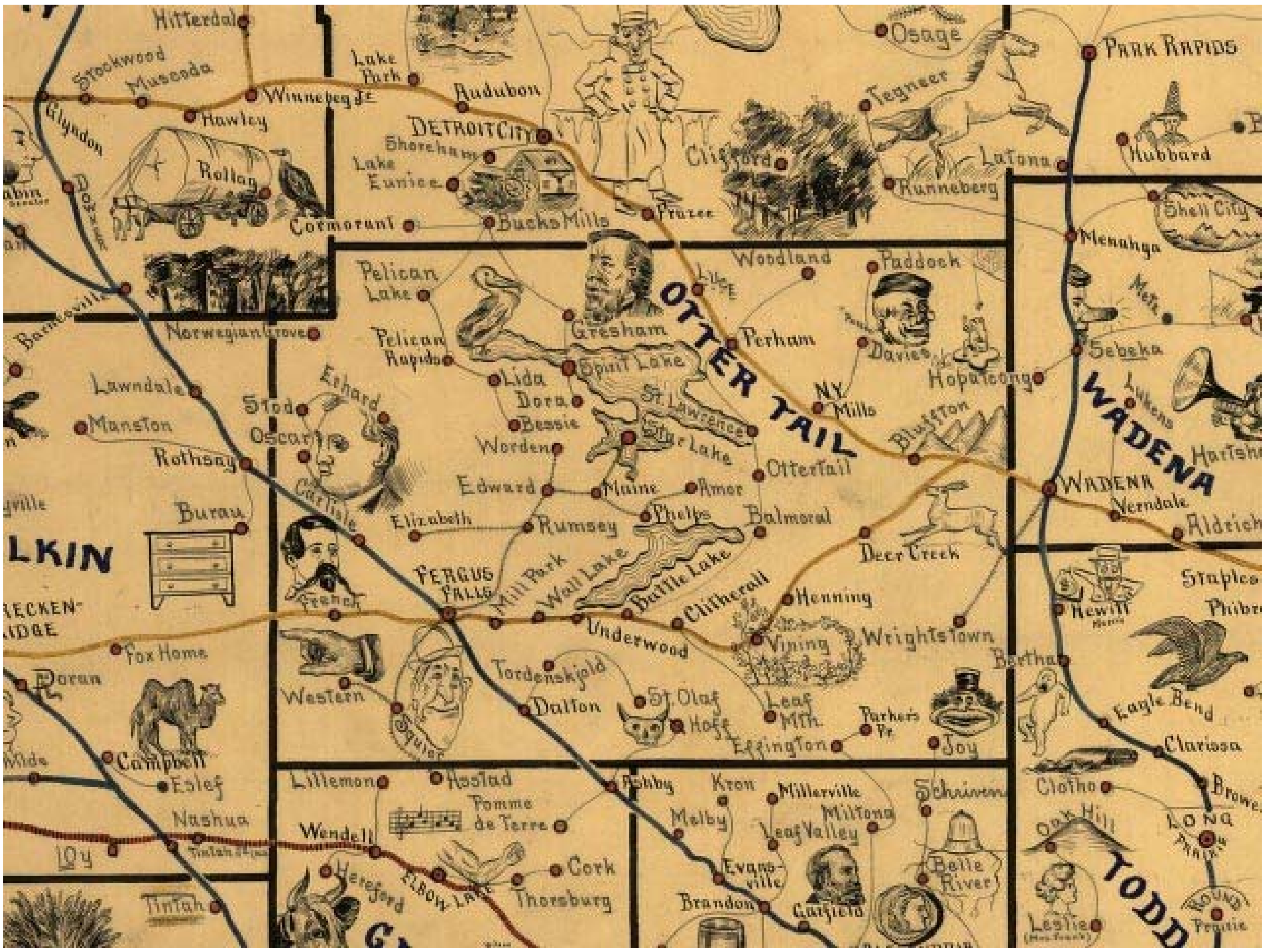
In 1910, Edgar Finley decided to check out the possibility of moving to California. His oldest daughter, Nellie, and his oldest son Elmer were already living there. He traveled to California, while his wife and the rest of the children remained in Otter Tail County. His daughter Mabel had married, and his son-in-law, Newton Veeder, was living on the family farm and helping with the farm in Edgar's absence. The family was living on the farm previously occupied by Theodore Finley and his family before they moved to North Dakota.

Some time before 1920, Edgar moved his family to California, where he and his wife ran a farm in Butte County, north of Sacramento, near the town of Paradise. His daughter Nellie worked for an olive produce company as a packer. His son Elmer worked as a driver, and his son Phillip was an oiler on a dredger. They were a long way from St. Lawrence County, New York.

Before 1920, Alva Smith and his wife, and four of his sons, Earnest, William, Archie, and Harry, had moved from the farm in Otter Tail County to farms in Richland County, North Dakota, just across the Red River, near Wapeton. (Archie and Harry later moved back to a farm in Otter Tail County, and occasionally came to visit us at our farm south of Clitherall.)

Theodore and Edgar Finley, and Alva Smith, had all left their farms in Elizabeth Township, Otter Tail County, and they all had taken up farming elsewhere. Why did they leave? Probably because the farmland in Elizabeth Township was not very good in the first place. The soil was sandy, and rocky in places, and soil nutrients were easily leached through the sandy soil. It is likely that crops were not doing well there after 20 years of farming. Chemical fertilizers were not yet available, and animal fertilizer produced on the farm probably was not enough to maintain good nutrient levels. And it appears that their farms were quite small. So they all moved to areas where they thought farming would be better.

The following page displays an artists rendition of a map of Otter Tail County in 1897. Note Western in the southwest corner, and Elizabeth, north of Fergus Falls.


OTTER TAIL
WADENA
TODD
LKIN
Hitterdal
Stockwood
Muscoda
Winnepeg Jc.
Hawley
Glyndon
Rollag
Lake Park
Audubon
DETROIT CITY
Shoreham
Lake Eunice
Cormorant
Bucks Mills
Prazee
Osage
Tegneer
Clifford
Runneberg
Latona
Park Rapids
Hubbard
Shell City
Menahga
Sebeka
Woodland
Paddock
Luce
Perham
Davies
Hopatcong
N.Y. Mills
Bluffton
Pelican Lake
Gresham
Pelican Rapids
Lida
Spirit Lake
Dora
Bessie
St. Lawrence
Star Lake
Worden
Ottertail
Norwegian Grove
Lawndale
Manston
Stod
Oscar
Eshard
Rothsay
Carlisle
Burau
Edward
Maine
Amor
Elizabeth
Rumsey
Phelps
Balmoral
FERGUS FALLS
Mill Park
Wall Lake
Battle Lake
Clitherall
Henning
Deer Creek
WADENA
Verndale
Aldrich
Staples
Hewitt
French
Underwood
Vining
Wrightstown
Bertha
RECKEN-
RIDGE
Fox Home
Doran
Western
Tordenskjold
Dalton
St. Olaf
Hoff
Leaf Mtn.
Parker's Pr.
Effington
Joy
Eagle Bend
Clarissa
Campbell
Eslef
Nashua
Loy
Tintah
Lillemon
Aastad
Pomme de Terre
Ashby
Kron
Millerville
Miltona
Schriver
Clotho
Oak Hill
Browerville
LONG PRAIRIE
Wendell
Herefrod
Elbow Lake
Cork
Thorsburg
Melby
Leaf Valley
Evansville
Brandon
Garfield
Belle River
Leslie
Round Prairie

Chapter 18: Homesteading in North Dakota

Prior to the invasion of Euro-Americans, the area that is now North Dakota was inhabited by two quite different groups of Native Americans. One group consisted of nomadic bands that depended primarily on the vast herds of Bison for food, and hide for clothing and shelter. After the Spanish had brought horses to the continent in the 1500s, these native groups, including the Dakota and the Cheyenne, gained a new mobility that made their lives much easier, until the invasion of the Europeans.

The other group of natives, including the Mandan, Hidatsa and Arikar, lived relatively sedentary lives, in permanent earthlodges, mainly near the Missouri River. They did some hunting to supplement produce from extensive gardens. Their fortified villages became commercial centers that evolved into trading posts during the fur trading years in the 1700s and early 1800s.

The area that is now North Dakota was purchased from France as part of the Louisiana Purchase of 1803, and it became part of the new United States. There was still a dispute about the northern boundary of the state, which was settled with Britain in 1818 when the 49th Parallel was agreed upon as the border between the United States and the British territory to the north.

Relations between Native Americans and American traders, explorers, and military personnel were relatively peaceful during the first half of the 1800s. There was a fairly brisk trade at major trading posts such as Fort Union and Fort Clark, with the natives selling furs and meat, in exchange for guns, metal tools, cloth and other manufactured goods. The contact between the two cultures was almost always to the detriment of the natives, however, particularly because of the natives' lack of any immunity to European diseases. Smallpox epidemics in the early 1800s almost wiped out several native tribes, including the Mandan people at Fort Clark.

After the Dakota uprising in Minnesota in 1862, relations between the Euro-Americans and the natives became much more violent, and in 1863 through 1865 major U.S. military expeditions searched the Northern Plains for Santee Dakota who had participated in the uprising in Minnesota. Battles at Whitestone Hill in 1863 and at Killdeer Mountain and in the Badlands in 1864 diminished Dakota resistance, forcing many onto reservations to avoid starvation. The great slaughter of the bison herds by Euro-American hunters in the 1870s and 1880s virtually wiped out the basis of life for the nomadic tribes. Some bands of Dakota resisted into the 1880s, but their old way of life was lost. One of the last notable battles between the natives and the American military took place just to the west of present-day North Dakota in 1876. General Custer and his men left their fort near Bismarck to search for Dakota to harass, kill or capture, and instead the General and his men were wiped out at the battle of Little Big Horn. This of course resulted in more punitive expeditions by the military, and those natives who were unable to flee to Canada finally surrendered in 1881.

Permanent American settlement of what is now North Dakota began after 1861, when Dakota Territory was organized by Congress. Significant immigration commenced when the westbound Northern Pacific Railway was completed as far as

the Missouri River in 1873. The towns of Fargo and Bismarck sprang up to serve the settlers and the railroad tracklaying crews. The Great Northern Railway was completed across northern North Dakota by 1887, running from Grand Forks to Williston and beyond. The line was completed to Seattle by 1893.

The first settlement "boom" in North Dakota occurred between 1879 and 1886, when over 100,000 people entered the territory, and settled primarily in the eastern half of the state. The majority were homesteaders, taking advantage of free land under the Homestead Act, but some organized large, highly mechanized, well capitalized farms. A second boom after 1905 increased the population from 190,983 in 1890 to 646,872 by 1920. Many were immigrants of Scandinavian or Germanic origin. Norwegians were the largest single ethnic group, and after 1885 many Germans immigrated from enclaves in eastern Europe. So significant was this foreign immigration that in 1915 over 79% of all North Dakotans were either immigrants or children of immigrants.

The influence of the railroads and their business allies guided North Dakota from its earliest territorial days. Led by political agent Alexander McKenzie, these groups worked to attract investment capital to the Northern Plains. Rail expansion peaked in 1905 when the Great Northern and the Soo line had a “railway war”, competing to capture more business with new spur lines in the state.

On November 2, 1889, President Benjamin Harrison signed the Act of Congress which admitted the state of North Dakota to the Union. The new state was a Republican Party stronghold. But there soon developed an insurgent movement. In 1890, the cooperative Farmers Alliance formed an Independent Party to challenge the "McKenzie Gang" that dominated the Republican Party. The Independents fused with the minority Democratic Party in 1892 and captured state government with a platform promising significant reforms. Although this effort was short-lived, the progressive movements in the state continued to battle the corporate interests from outside the state that dominated the state government. In 1907, a new cooperative movement, the American Society of Equity, came to North Dakota and by 1913 had created over 400 marketing and purchasing local cooperatives throughout the state, to give farmers some control over the price they received for their produce, and the price they paid for supplies.

McKenzie County

McKenzie County was initially established in 1883. It was named for Alexander McKenzie, the somewhat unsavory politician and developer mentioned above. It was initially planned that the area between the Missouri River and the Little Missouri River would all be part of the Fort Berthold Indian Reservation. This would include most of the present-day county. But as was usual in dealings with the natives, the pressure to open more land for homesteading resulted in reducing the size of the Reservation in McKenzie to a relatively small part of the eastern end of the county. Because of this, the County was not opened for homesteading until 1902. And the county was not officially organized as a political entity until 1905. The county seat was at Alexander for the first year, and then moved to Schafer in 1906.

Most of the County is essentially an island surrounded by the Missouri River on the North and East, and by the Little Missouri River and the Badlands on the South. The Montana border is on the west side of the County. Because of this location between the Missouri and the Badlands, access to the area was difficult. Settlers had to cross either the Missouri River or the Badlands and the Little Missouri River to access most of the county, and there were no bridges yet across the rivers. And there were no railroad spurs into the county. The closest railroad was on the north side of the Missouri River, running through Williston. So homesteading in the county was slow compared with other parts of the state.

In 1913 a railroad spur was built into the County from the north and west, stopping at what became Watford City. Efforts to extend the railroad a few more miles to Schafer were unsuccessful. So the railroad stopped just west of Cherry Creek, and the end of the line made a good spot for the development of a new town. The railroad resulted in the rapid growth of Watford City and the decline of Schafer. In 1941, the County seat was moved from Schafer to Watford City.

Arrival of Frazee, Morris, Finley, and Smith Ancestors

Morris Clifford Frazee came to North Dakota, riding the Great Northern Railroad to Williston, in 1906. He was a soft city slicker, who had little or no experience as a farmer. But for some unknown reason he had decided to put some excitement in his life. He may have been fooled by all the advertisements by railroad companies, which were designed to mislead people about the wealth that awaited those who went west to homestead. When he arrived in North Dakota in the summer of 1906, he was already 37 years old.

He soon learned that most of the good land in the rest of North Dakota had already been taken, but there was still land available in McKenzie County. He crossed the Missouri River on the cable ferryboat just south of Williston, and began searching for a good spot on which to make a homestead claim. He learned that the best land along the Missouri River and the Yellowstone River, in what were the fertile flood plains of those rivers, had already been purchased, mainly by cattlemen who had bought up large tracts of land for their herds. So he headed south and found a relatively flat prairie with what looked like good soil, and it had a nice creek running through it, that was later named Cherry Creek. It was about 30 miles southeast of Williston, as the crow flies, near the center of the county. Much of the rest of the county was more rugged, with buttes and deep coulees, that did not look like good farm land. And most places had no access to a good stream.

He made a claim on a quarter section of land, and then started figuring out how to start a farm and survive the coming winter. He had decided to pay cash for the 160 acres, rather than being obligated to live on and farm the land for five years before he could get title, as required by the provisions of the Homestead Act. He could pay $1.25 per acre and get title to the land after only six months of residence. He made his purchase at the Land Office in Williston

He was starting from scratch. Unlike experienced farmers who were moving there from the east, he had no farming equipment, horses or cattle to bring with him. He

needed to buy all that. There were almost no trees around, just a few scrub trees growing along the creek that were not suitable for building a house. Almost everything he needed to start a farm would have to be hauled by horse and wagon from Williston. In the summer the wagons would cross the river on the ferry. In the winter they would cross on the ice. And for several weeks in the fall and spring they could not cross at all, because the ice was too thick for the ferry to operate, but not strong enough to hold horses and wagons. There were no established roads, so the wagons had to cross the open prairie, hoping to avoid mud holes when it rained.

That first winter Morris Clifford Frazee was forced to live in what was essentially a cave; a partial sod house dug into the side of a rise. He had to walk across open prairie about 30 miles to Williston to get supplies, and then carry them or pull them back on a sled to his little homestead. Was he wishing he had never left the big city?

But he wasn't the only one struggling to survive in McKenzie County. There was already a very small town of a couple buildings about three to four miles to the southeast of the Frazee homestead, called Schafer. More homesteaders were moving into the area, and soon there were periodic arrivals of supply wagons in Schafer from Williston so it was no longer necessary to go to Williston to buy some flour or kerosene or other common necessities.

Schafer had started as a rural post office established in 1899 with Charles F. Shafer as postmaster. It was named for the postmaster, with the addition of the "c" as a result of continued misspelling of the name.

Morris Clifford had met his six months residency requirements by June, 1907, and the local land office approved his title. He received his official deed to the property in December, 1907. A copy of the official Homestead Patent, signed by President Theodore Roosevelt, is attached at Appendix B.

Also in 1906, **Theodore Finley** and his brother-in-law, Eli Smith, caught the train from Fergus Falls to Williston, to check out the prospects for homesteads in McKenzie County. There were still many quarter sections available in the County, and they found two adjoining choice spots which happened to adjoin the Frazee homestead, and they filed their claims with the land office. Theodore Finley made a Homestead claim on a quarter section in Section 18 of Township 150N, Range 98, which was on the same section as the 160 acres purchased by Morris Clifford Frazee. (Actually, he made claims on three separate parcels totaling 152.9 acres, or almost a quarter section). A copy of Theodore Finley's Homestead Patent, signed by President Woodrow Wilson, is attached at Appendix B.

Eli Smith's selected spot adjoined the Finley property to the north, in Section 7 of Township 150N, Range 98. Eli decided to pay cash for his property so he could get title after six months residence, rather than wait five years.

After filing their claims, they probably constructed homestead shacks, before they headed back to Otter Tail County to rejoin their families. The following spring they loaded up their possessions and moved to McKenzie County. Theodore had farm equipment and livestock to move. Eli and his family were living in the town of

Fergus and probably did not have much equipment or livestock to move. It is likely that they loaded all their belongings, including farm machinery and livestock, into train cars, to take them as far as Williston.

In 1907, Theodore was 49 years old (although his wife thought he was 47). His wife **Mary Elizabeth Rose** was 42; their daughter **Pearl** was just turning 20; and their daughter Irene was twelve years old.

Eli Smith, Mary's brother, was 48 years old; his wife Beret was 37; his oldest children, twins Orlando and Olive, were 13, and he had five younger children, including May Smith (who would grow up and marry Alfred Hystad, brother of Carl Hystad, who married Esther Frazee). Three more children were born in McKenzie County.

Theodore Finley had done all of this once before. He had broken sod on virgin land in Otter Tail County. He had built a house and a barn on the prairie. This would be easier, because he had the experience, and he had farm equipment and some livestock. And he had family and neighbors who would help out during those first rough years. His farm had good soil; the major concern was whether it would rain enough out there in the far west great plains.

"Clifford" Frazee (he usually used the name Clifford or sometimes Clifford M. or maybe just M.C.) was delighted to have some neighbors. And he was particularly delighted to have a beautiful young single woman, Pearl Finley, move into the neighborhood. He was worried that she would reject him because he was almost twice her age. But no one around there knew how old he was; so he would just bend the truth a little, and make himself five years younger. It must have been a whirlwind romance, because he soon proposed, and she said yes. She was 20 years old, and Clifford was "33" (really 38). They were married at the Finley home on Thanksgiving Day, November 27, 1907. It was one of the first weddings in McKenzie County. Now he had a woman in his life, and he had another set of hands to help on the farm.

At some point between 1907 and 1909, Pearl Finley filed a Homestead claim on 160 acres in Section 12, Township 150N, Range 99, which was in the section just to the west of Eli Smith's farm, and adjoining her father's homestead on the corner. It is not apparent how she was able to do this, because the Homestead Act and regulations limited homesteading to single individuals of at least 21 years of age, or to heads of families. Married women were excluded from filing an initial claim, but if they filed before they were married, they could "prove up" the claim after their marriage. In Pearl's case, she did not turn 21 until May, 1908, at which time she was already married. So either she filed a claim before she turned 21, or after she was married. It is likely that she filed the claim in 1907 before she was married, and fibbed a bit about her age. The initial claim was in the name of Pearl M. Finley, and the final Patent was in the name of "Pearl M. Frazee, formerly Pearl M. Finley".

The homesteading requirements also provided that the homesteader build a residence on the claim, with a house of at least 12 feet by 14 feet in size, and the claimant must live in the house for at least six months of the year, for five years. The homesteader

also must cultivate some portion of the property for five consecutive years. Pearl would not have had any problem meeting the cultivation requirement, but in order to meet the residence requirements, it would have been necessary for Clifford and Pearl to move from his property to hers during this period. I do not know whether they actually lived on her property for the five years, but in any case, her "prove up" affidavit was accepted, and she received the official deed for the property on January 7, 1914. A copy of the official Homestead Patent, signed by President Woodrow Wilson, is attached at Appendix B.

In May, 1909, Clifford and Pearl Frazee were proud parents of a daughter, Alice Irene. In 1910 Clifford had convinced his sister Anna to leave her job and her mother and sister in Indiana and come join him in North Dakota. Clifford's father, Moses, had died in 1905, and his mother, Harriet, and sisters Alice and Anna, were living on their farm in Floyd County, Indiana. Anna agreed to come to McKenzie County, at least to check it out, and moved in with Clifford and Pearl and baby Alice.

The area around the Frazee, Finley and Smith farms was known as Schafer Township, and between 1905 and 1910 it was settled rapidly. Most of the settlers in the Township were like the Finleys and Smiths and Clifford Frazee; they came from other states in America, looking for more free land. Only a few came directly from another country. By 1910 there were over 550 people living in the Township, and the town of Schafer had become a significant commercial center for central McKenzie County. In 1906 the town also had become the County Seat, so it had the county jail, and the county court room. By 1910 there were frequent supply wagons coming from Williston to Schafer. And there were scheduled stage coach runs between Schafer and Williston, carrying passengers and the mail. Things were getting pretty civilized!

In the 1910 Census, Morris Clifford continued to list his name as Clifford M., and he listed his age as 36 (while he was about to turn 41). Pearl listed her age as 24, although she was still 23. And his sister Anna's age was listed as 39, although she was really 44!

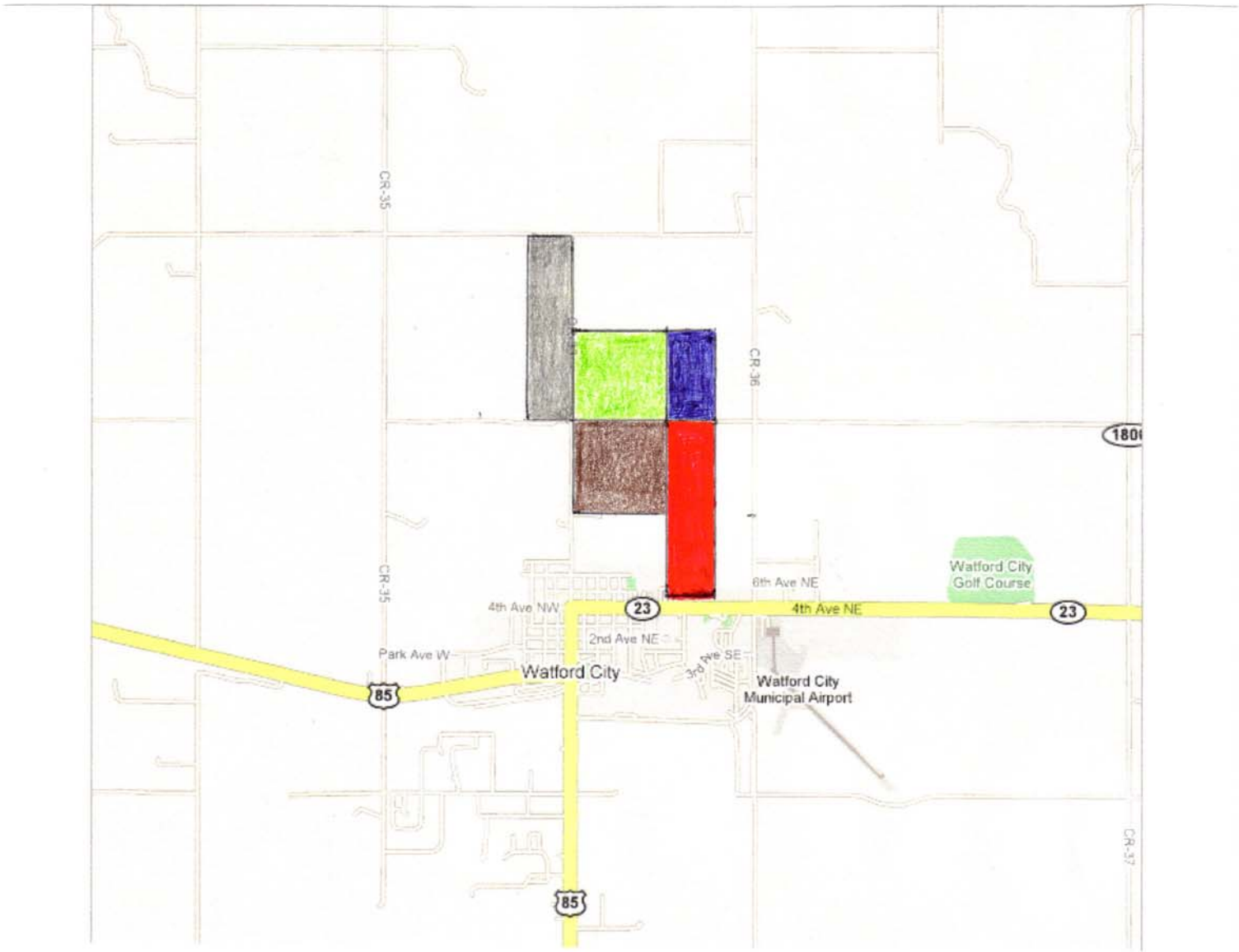
In 1910 or 1911, Clifford's sister Anna placed a Homestead claim on 80 acres of land in Section 7, which was just to the north of Clifford's farm, and just to the east of Eli Smith's farm. The relatives were getting a lock on the area!. She received the deed to this property in 1916. Meanwhile, in 1915 she made a homestead claim on 160 acres located east of the town of Schafer. (In 1909, the Homestead Act was amended to permit homesteaders to claim at least 320 acres of land.) Shortly before completing the five years of residence and cultivation of this new property, she sold her original 80 acres to Pearl Frazee. She received the deed to the 160 acres in 1920. The 80 acre parcel that Anna sold to Pearl Frazee became the location of Clifford and Pearl's "homeplace" in the county, just across the road from Clifford's original claim.

The map on the following page shows the location of the Frazee, Finley and Smith homesteads on a current map of the area.

Finley, Frazee and Smith Homesteads in McKenzie County, North Dakota

M. Clifford Frazee's claim is colored red.
A. Theodore Finley's claim is colored brown.
Eli Smith's claim is colored green.
Pearl Finley's claim in colored gray.
Anna Frazee's claim in colored blue.

Clifford's and Pearl's claims were an eight of a section wide and a full section long, totaling 160 acres. Theodore's and Eli's claims were traditional quarter sections, but each was missing a parcel of about 7 acres, making their claims just under 153 acres; the Federal land records do not show where the missing lots were located. Anna's claim was for 80 acres, or the western half of the southeast quarter of the section.



On Easter Sunday, April 7, 1912, Pearl Frazee gave birth to a baby girl, and named her **Esther Lillian**, in honor of the day.

In 1913, the Great Northern Railway completed construction of a railroad spur into McKenzie County, coming from the west. It reached Arnegard in early 1913, and by the end of the year it reached a point just west of Cherry Creek, only about a half mile south of the southern end of Clifford Frazees' farm. The company had planned to continue on east, to Schafer and beyond, but for unknown reasons the construction stopped, out there in the open prairie. A few buildings sprung up to handle freight and passengers coming to the end of the line. Initially it was called Banks, but the Post Office rejected that name, so it was named Watford, at the suggestion of the local physician who had come from Watford, Ontario. (Because of confusion with Wolford in Pierce County, it was renamed Watford City in 1916.) Watford City quickly grew to become the largest town in the County by 1920.

In about 1913, Theodore and Mary Finley's younger daughter Irene was married to Allan Vandergrift, the son of a neighboring farm family. Their first child, Rachel, was born in 1914, and was just two years younger than Esther. Over the next 16 years they had six more children. The Frazee kids had some cousins to play with.

In April, 1914, Pearl and Clifford had a son, named Morris Robinette Frazee, named after his father and grandfather.

With the development of Watford City so close by, the Frazees, Finleys and Smiths found themselves in a very advantageous location, just a mile or so north of town. They had easy access to stores, and they were able to sell their grain and other farm produce right there in Watford. The Frazee and Smith children had a relatively easy walk to school in Watford. In ten years, this community had changed from open prairie to a humming metropolis.

With the population boom, Clifford Frazee began to provide dairy products to the folks in town, and this became a major part of his farm operations for the next several years.

In about 1915, Clifford Frazee's mother, Harriet Ellen, and his other sister, Alice C., moved to McKenzie County from Indiana. Now he had his entire family here except for brother Lewis, who had gone even farther west, to Arizona. Harriet and Alice lived in a house in Watford. In 1915, Harriet Ellen was 72 years old, and Alice was 51. After her husband died Harriet started going by the name Ellen, rather than Harriet, and she used a middle initial of M., apparently for her maiden name Morris.

Esther now had all three of her surviving grandparents living right there, within a mile or so of her home. She also had her aunts Anna, Alice and Irene, and her great uncle Eli. And a bunch of Smith cousins. And Vandergrift cousins. As well as her sister Alice and brother Morris. In June, 1917, she got another brother, named Vance Milton Frazee.

Meanwhile, in the outside world, events were underway that would impact even the residents of the North Dakota prairie. The "Great War" was being fought in Europe, starting in 1914, and it caused an increase in demand for food exports from America, resulting in higher grain prices, good for North Dakota farmers. (The "Great War" was not yet called World War I, because no one knew there was going to be a second world war a few years later!)

The war also helped speed up the introduction of the newly developed internal combustion engine farm tractor. Because of the demand for more food, Henry Ford accelerated the mass production of a smaller, affordable farm tractor that helped revolutionize farming in America over the next three decades. In 1917, Ford began producing the Fordson Model F tractor, which was much lighter, and much lower cost than the few large tractors that had been produced by other companies in the early 1900s. The Fordson was produced in Michigan, and also in a Ford plant in Ireland to supply the European market. The Ford breakthrough spurred International Harvester to produce a similar lightweight tractor to successfully compete with Ford. By 1922, the mass production of tractors, and price wars between Ford and International Harvester, brought tractor prices down as low as $395, and hundreds of thousands were being produced.

The introduction of the general purpose tractor to American farms had major, unforeseen consequences. It permitted farmers to operate their farms with much less manpower, resulting in a loss of agricultural employment. It also permitted farmers to manage much larger farms, which made it harder for smaller farms to compete, resulting in a sustained movement of farmers from agriculture to other employment, primarily in cities. It was the beginning of the great internal migration from the farms to the cities. And the tractor allowed homesteaders in the western great plains to plow up millions of acres of native grassland that never should have been plowed, and create the great dust bowl of the 1930s.

In 1917, President Woodrow Wilson decided the United States should take sides in the European War, which was probably the greatest foreign policy blunder by an American President, until George W. Bush decided to invade Iraq. The Great War was a war without a cause, other than to provide an opportunity for the military leaders of the European empires to implement their grand war strategies. The war started without a good reason, and the opposing sides were so evenly matched that neither side could bring about a clear victory. The political leaders on both sides were willing to keep sending their young men to the front to be slaughtered by the new weapons of war, including artillery, machine guns and poisonous gas. Over 20 million soldiers and civilians died in that insane war. Unfortunately, President Wilson thought that America could bring an end to this madness, and make the world safe for democracy. American intervention, starting in April, 1917, helped France and Britain defeat Germany and the Ottoman Empire, but that defeat and the harsh penalties placed on Germany, set the stage for the rise of Hitler and fascism, and the horrors of the Third Reich. And the resulting power vacuum in the Middle East led to the Israeli-Palestinian conflict and the other continuing Middle East instability.

Fortunately, Esther's family members were not of the right age to be called up as potential cannon fodder. M. Clifford was too old. And Esther's brothers were much too young. But several other young men from McKenzie County were called to serve, and some were killed or wounded.

The War also contributed to the worldwide Spanish Flu pandemic starting in 1918, that spread rapidly through military camps in the United States and abroad, and eventually killed over 50 million people around the world, including several in McKenzie County.

But the war contributed to a period of prosperity in McKenzie County. Farmers were buying Ford Model T automobiles, as well as tractors. Roads were being improved to accommodate the automobiles. And in 1918 a telephone system was installed in Watford City. Clifford's sister Alice Frazee, became the local telephone operator in 1919, where she worked until she retired in 1928, at the age of 65. By then there were 112 telephones in Watford City.

The photo on the following page is M. Clifford Frazee and Pearl May Finley Frazee, taken in about 1925, on the recently completed Sanish bridge over the Missouri River, on the eastern edge of McKenzie County.

On November 7, 1925, Harriet Ellen Morris Frazee passed away in Watford City. Her body was returned to Indiana for burial next to her husband Moses Robinette. Anna Frazee accompanied her mother's body back to Indiana, and she remained there for the next two years and attended beauty school in Indiana, before returning to Watford City.

In 1928, Andrew Theodore Finley reached the age of 70. He had done well with his life, and had overcome the disadvantages of his youth. He was happily married to his dear Mary Elizabeth Rose. He had some extra money and decided to buy his first automobile. He didn't have any experience driving a car, but he could learn. He drove the car around his farm yard a bit; he was learning. And meanwhile his daughter Irene knew how to drive, and she could take him places.

Theodore and Mary decided they would like to take a trip back to Minnesota to visit her brothers and nieces and nephews and other relatives there. They convinced Irene to go with them, and she could drive. They also brought along with them one of their favorite grandchildren, Esther Frazee, who was then a sweet sixteen. As they were leaving, Pearl took her sister Irene aside and made her promise not to let their dad drive the car. They both knew he wanted to drive, but they both thought he would be a hazard to himself and everyone else.

They were planning on taking two days to get to Minnesota, and headed toward Minot and then Devils Lake. Theodore was bugging Irene to let him drive, just for a little way. Finally, somewhere near Rugby, she had a moment of weakness and let him get behind the wheel. They were out in open country, and there was almost no traffic on the road; he couldn't do too much harm. At first he did fine. He had no problem staying on the right side of the road, and he was enjoying himself.

Up ahead was one of North Dakota's famous sharp jogs in the road as it made a 90 degree turn to follow the section line. As he approached the turn, Irene told him to slow down; step on the brake. But Theodore stepped on the accelerator rather than the brake. They careened around the corner, and the car went off the road and rolled over. Irene and Esther were screaming. There was dust everywhere, the flimsy roof of the car had collapsed; windows were broken. Theodore, Irene and Esther crawled out of the car, and at first it appeared that no one was seriously hurt. But Mary was not moving. Her neck was broken when the car rolled over. She died there beside the road.

Theodore was inconsolable. For the next four years he was living, but he wasn't alive. The sparkle had gone from his eyes. The ready smile had disappeared. His health began to decline. He hired a girl to keep house for him, but there was no replacing Mary Elizabeth Rose. His daughters and grandkids visited him whenever they could, but they were not able to cheer him up.

When the US Census taker came around in 1930, Theodore Finley was back to using his given name. He was Andrew T. Finley again. And he no longer needed to fib about his age. He admitted that he was really 72.

Andrew Theodore died in 1932, at the age of 74, as a result of a stroke. He and Mary are buried at the Schafer Cemetery a couple of miles east of Watford City.

Theodore was the last of Esther's four grandparents to pass away.

Epilogue

Esther's mother, Pearl May Finley Frazee, died April 4, 1938, just under 51 years old. She died from a blood clot in the brain a few days after surgery for tumors, in a hospital in Bismarck. Esther's father, Morris Clifford Frazee, died March 8, 1963, at age 93. His sister Alice died in 1944. And his sister Anna died in 1942.

Growth and Dispersal

The descendants of Moses Robinette Frazee, Harriet Ellen Morris, Andrew Theodore Finley, and Mary Elizabeth Rose Smith multiplied rapidly after 1930.

On September 25, 1929, Esther Frazee married Carl Hystad; they drove to Sidney, Montana to get married. This was just over three weeks before the stock market crash of October, 1929, and the beginning of the Great Depression. Carl and Esther didn't have anything invested in the stock market; they barely had enough money to buy a marriage license.

Esther and Carl had nine children, and Esther had 70 living descendants when she passed away in 1993. Her sister Alice, who married Perrin Thompson in 1930, had six children, who had children and grandchildren. Her brother Morris, who married Olga Oian in 1936, had three sons, who had children and grandchildren. Her brother Vance, who married Alice May Hopper in 1943, had six children, who had children and grandchildren. And Irene Finley Vandergrift had seven children, who had children and grandchildren.

Morris Clifford Frazee's two sisters and his brother Lewis did not have any children, but Morris Clifford had enough descendants to make up for all of them.

Some of these descendants are still in McKenzie County, North Dakota, but most of them have dispersed all around the United States, from the Eastern seaboard to the West coast; from the Canadian border to southern Florida and Arizona. And probably none of them is a farmer. Almost all of Esther's ancestors were farmers. But after her generation, almost all of the descendants make their living someplace other than on a farm.

We still have cousins living in all those major stops that our ancestors made along the way from Massachusetts, Connecticut, New York, New Jersey, Pennsylvania, Kentucky, Ohio, Indiana, and Minnesota. There are tens of thousands of them, and maybe even hundreds of thousands of them, here in America.

Countries of Origin

Our Frazee ancestors did not come to America from France with General Lafayette; they had been here a long time before Lafayette showed up. At least two of Esther's ancestors came from France long before the War for Independence.

We did have a few Dutch ancestors, who were prominent citizens in the New Netherland Colony.

We had at least one ancestor from Scotland, who came to America as a British prisoner of war. Some of our other ancestors may have been Scottish, or Scotch-Irish, but I have not been able to prove that. It is likely that Theodore Finley's grandfather came from Catholic Ireland.

It is not simple to categorize Esther's European heritage, other than to say it is primarily British, and entirely northwestern European.

Her grandfather Theodore Finley was at least 25 percent Irish; the other 75% is unknown because I have not found the ancestors of his mother or grandmother.

Her grandmother Mary Smith may have been 100% English, although there are a few of her ancestors for whom I have not identified country of origin.

Her grandfather Moses R. Frazee was a northwestern European melting pot, of about 37% English, 25% Welsh, 3% Dutch, 1% Scottish, and 34% unidentified northern European.

Her grandmother Harriet Ellen Morris also was a northwestern European melting pot, of about 25% Welsh, 22% English, 1.5% Dutch, 1.5% French, and 50% unknown northwestern European.

Esther's ancestors also participated in a large number of different religious groups, including Puritan, Separatist, Anglican, Presbyterian, Baptist, and Quaker.

DNA analysis done for some of Esther's offspring is consistent with this genealogy, but DNA analysis does not attempt to fine-tune the source of ancestors. For example, **23andMe** lumps "British and Irish" together; it does not break out England, Scotland, Wales, Northern Ireland or Catholic Ireland as separate locations. It also lumps "German and French" together, which includes Belgium and the Netherlands. And it has a general category of "Broadly Northwestern European", which could include people from Great Britain, Ireland, The Netherlands, Germany, France, Belgium, and Scandinavia, reflecting the results of migrations in the region for many centuries.

Longevity

Several of Esther's ancestors lived beyond 80 years of age, and a few made it past 90. On her father's side, there were twelve ancestors who lived beyond 80 years, among Clifford Frazee's 30 ancestors going back four generations. Clifford lived to be 93, and his mother made it to 83. Harriet had six oldies on her side: Jonathan Morris, 87; Owen Davis, 84; John Wilson, 86; Amos Wilson, 83, Lydia Thatcher, 98; and Amos Thatcher, 94. Clifford's father had five ancestors who lived past 80: John H. Wolcott, 82, Sarah James, 92; Susanna Winans, 90; Jane Williams, 83; and Moses (I) Frazee, 83.

On the other side of the ledger, seven of those 30 ancestors did not make it to age 55. Lewis Frazee died at age 35; Jacob Wolcott died at 51; Rebecca Robbins at 50; William James at 54; Sarah Davis at 41; Sarah Owens at 26; and Ann Mills at 32.

On Esther's mother's side of the family, there was only one who lived past 80, going back five generations; that was Mary Smith's father, Samuel P. Smith, who lived to age 84. On the other hand, few of Pearl Finley's ancestors died before reaching 55 years. Samuel P. Smith's great grandfather, Samuel Smith, died at age 48, and it appears that A. Theodore Finley's mother died at about age 34. Of course, Pearl was only 50 when she passed away.

The genealogy charts in Appendix A show the age at death, if known, for each of the ancestors.

Adventurers

Our ancestors were always on the front edge of the European settlement of America, from Jamestown, Virginia and Plymouth Colony, to McKenzie County, North Dakota. And many of these ancestors were not youngsters when they moved to the frontier. William Brewster and his wife were in their mid-50s when they left for America on the Mayflower, and Stephen Hopkins was 38. Mary Durant was 49 when she came to Plymouth Colony, and Joseph Harding was 48. Edmond Hobart was in his 60s when he came to the Colony, and Gabriel Whelden and John Mayo were in their 40s.

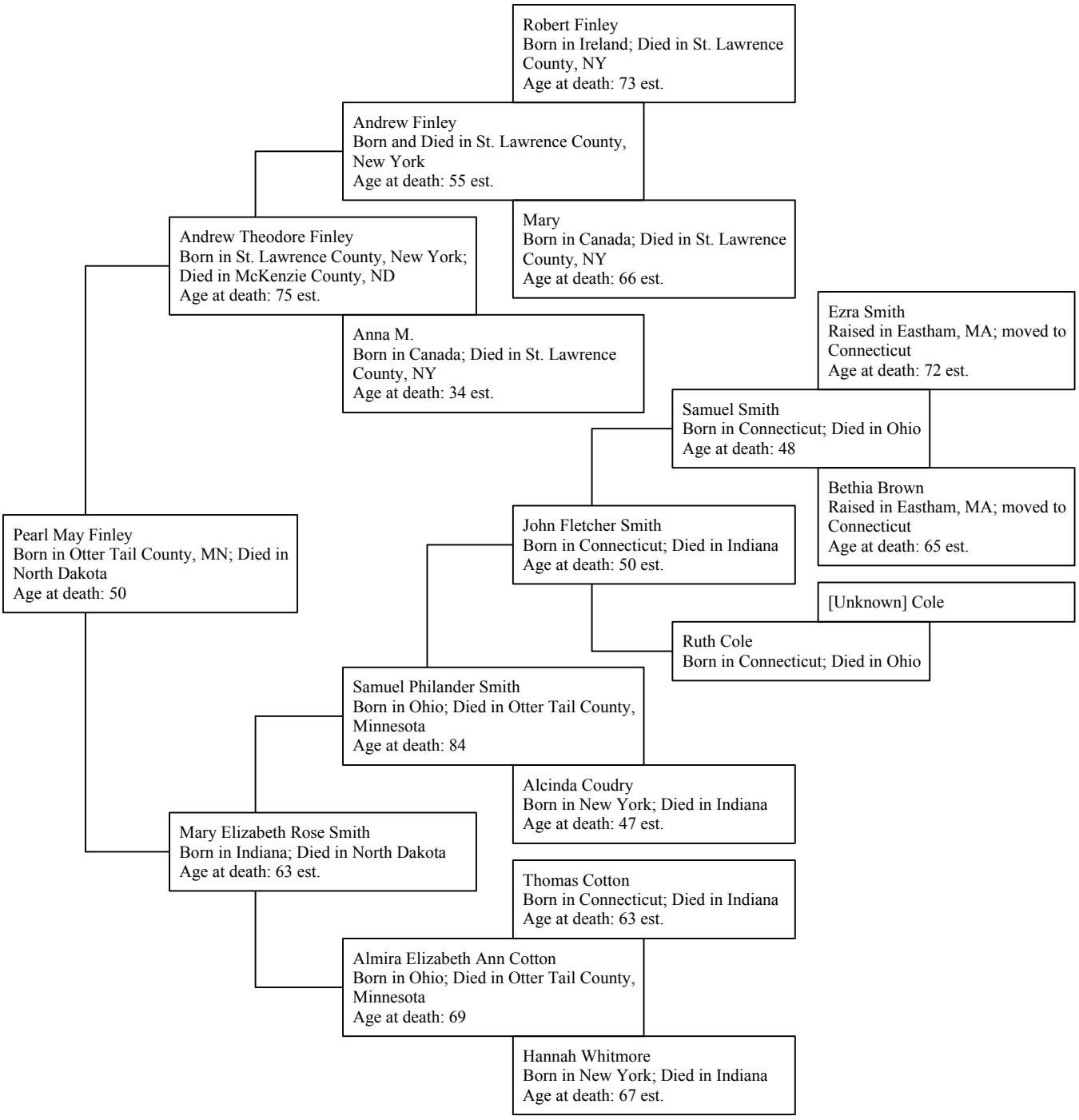
When Ralph Smith and his wife Mary Mayo left Cape Cod to start a new settlement in Connecticut, they were in their 50s. John Wilson was 48 when he headed for the wilderness of Kentucky. Samuel P. Smith and his wife Almira were in their 50s when they moved to Otter Tail County. Clifford Frazee was 37 when he came to North Dakota; and Theodore Finley was almost 50 when he moved to North Dakota to homestead.

Esther was descended from a group of independent and ambitious adventurers who were not afraid to take major risks and push into the unknown in pursuit of a better life for themselves and their descendants.

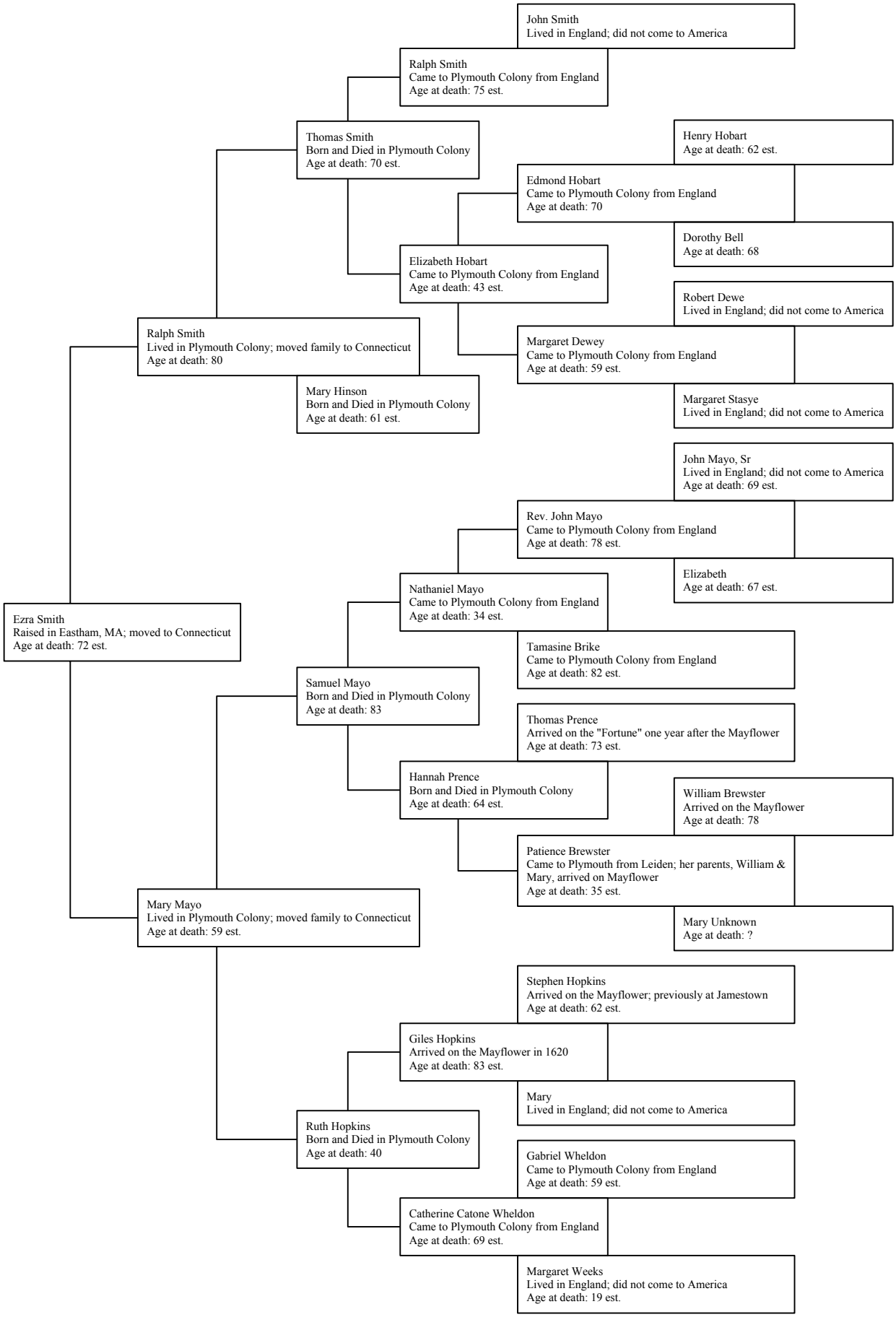
Appendix A

Genealogy Charts of Ancestors

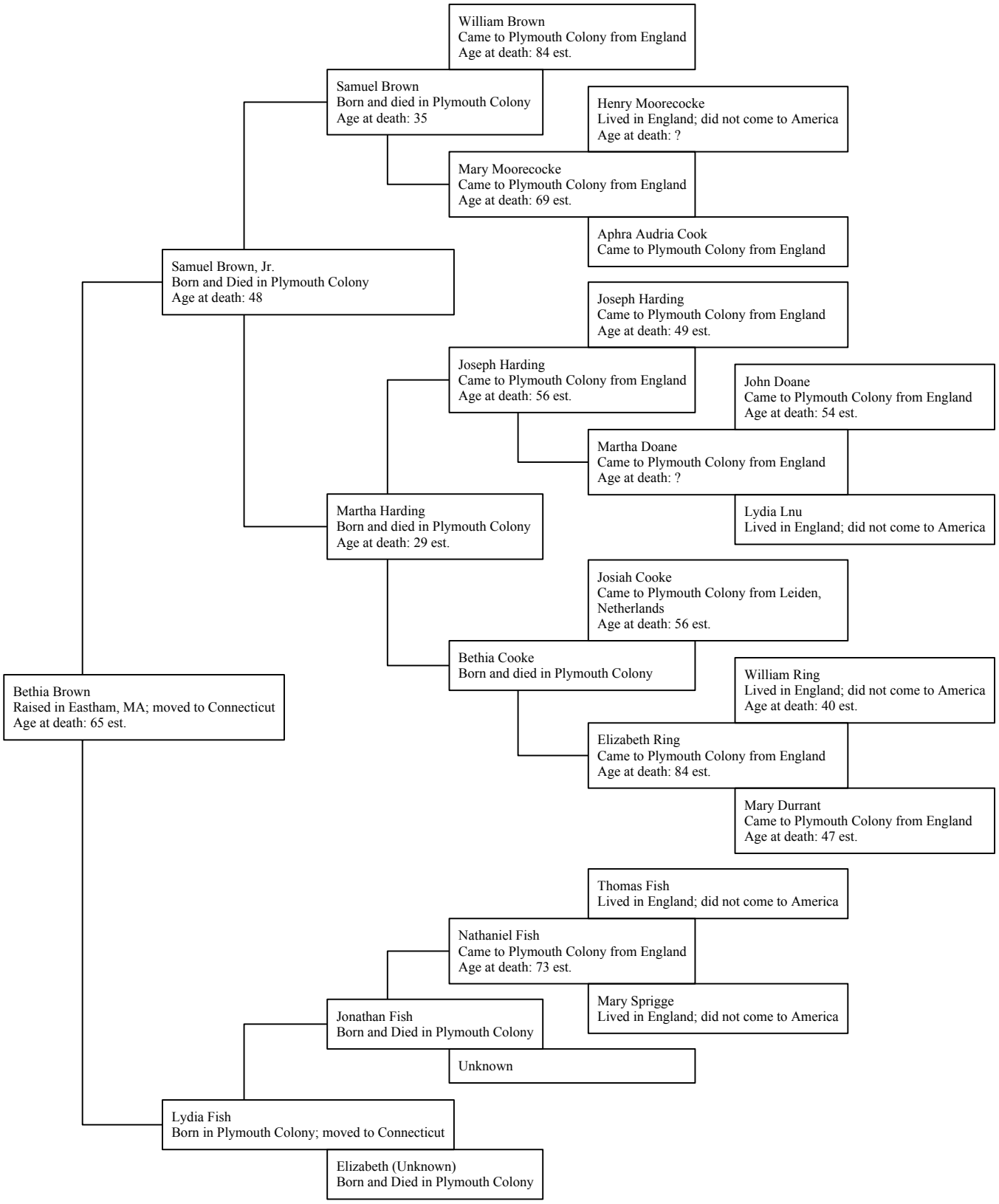
Ancestors of Pearl May Finley



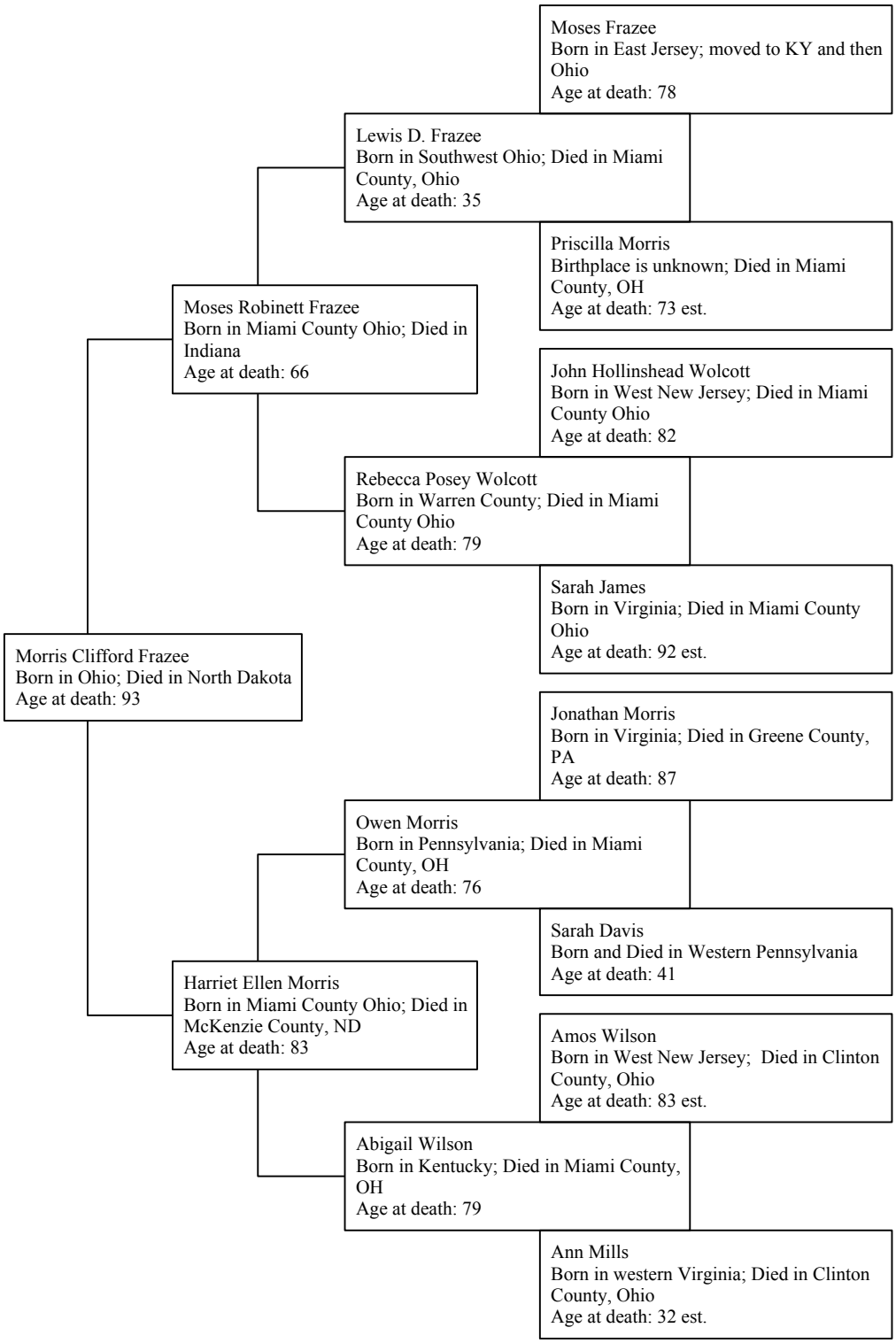
More Ancestors of Pearl May Finley



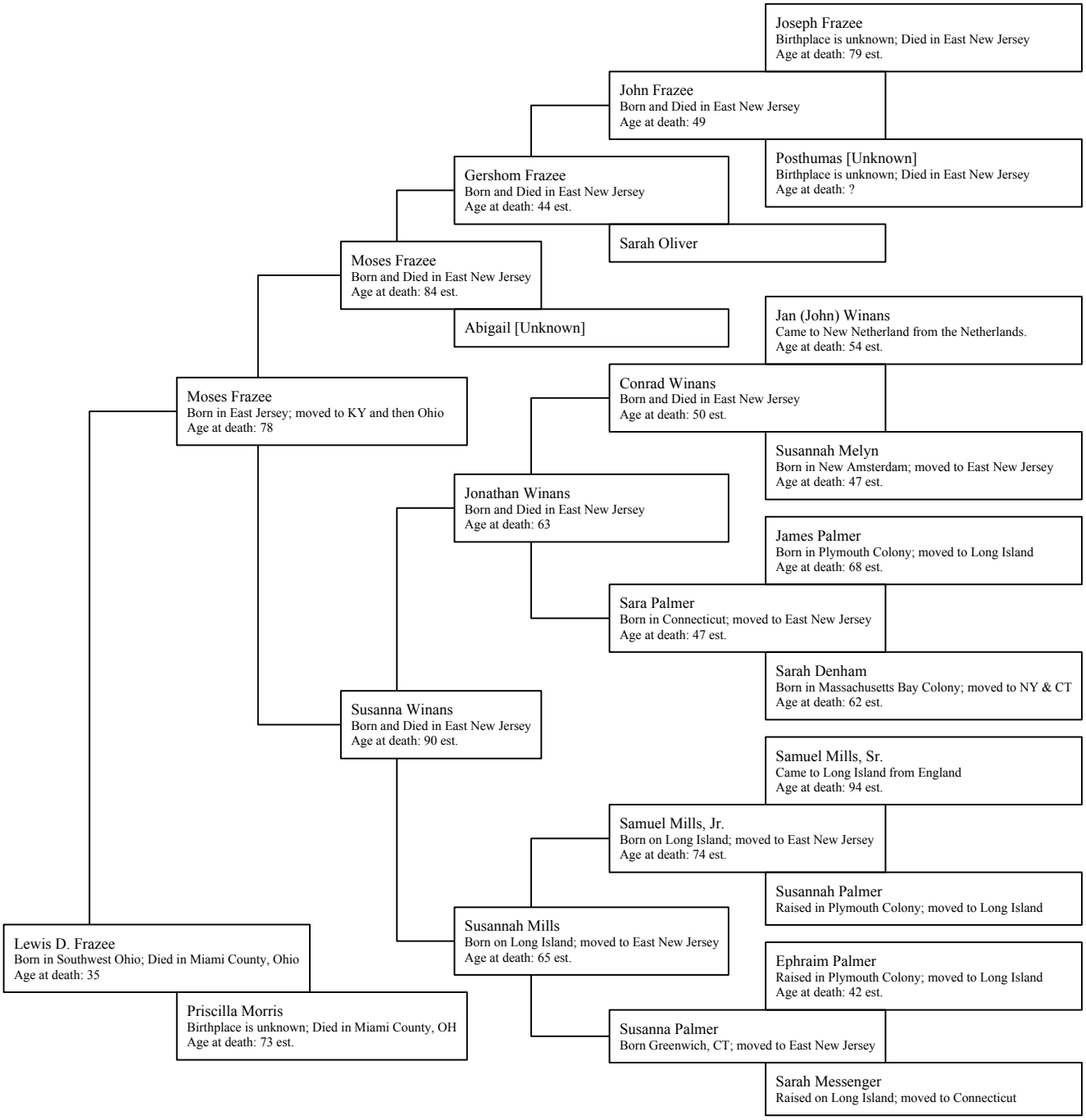
Still More Ancestors of Pearl May Finley



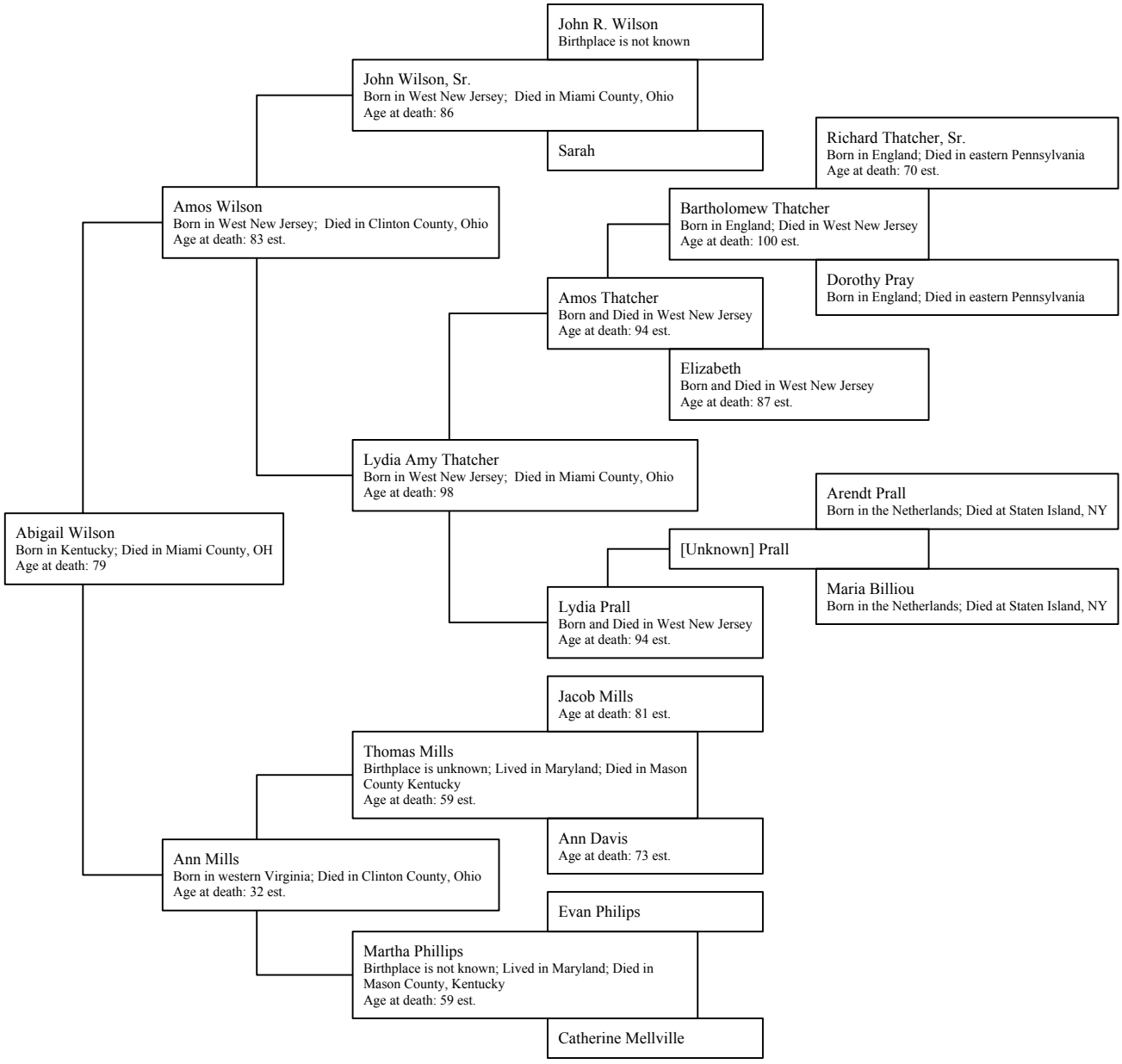
Ancestors of Morris Clifford Frazee



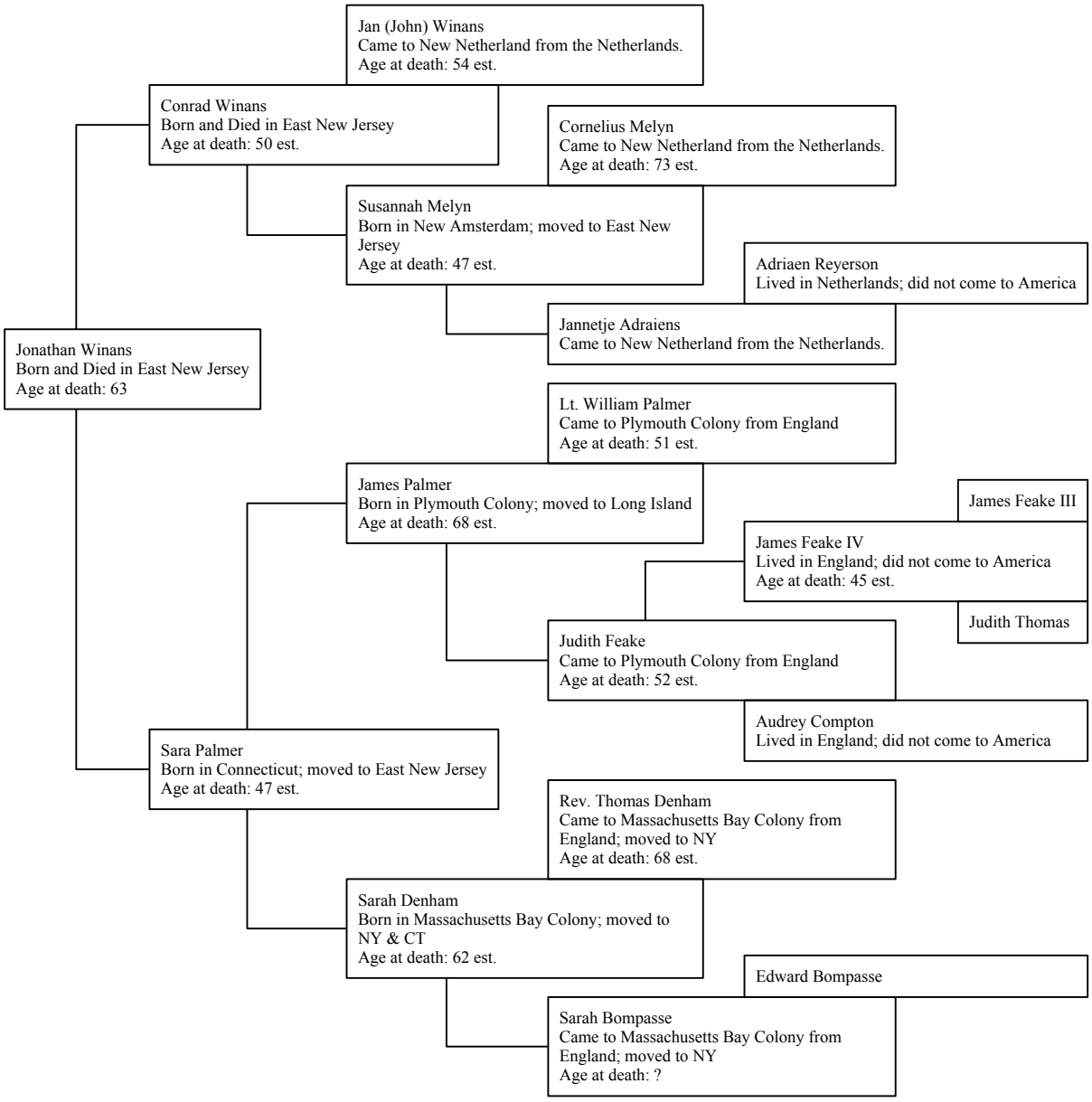
More Ancestors of Morris Clifford Frazee



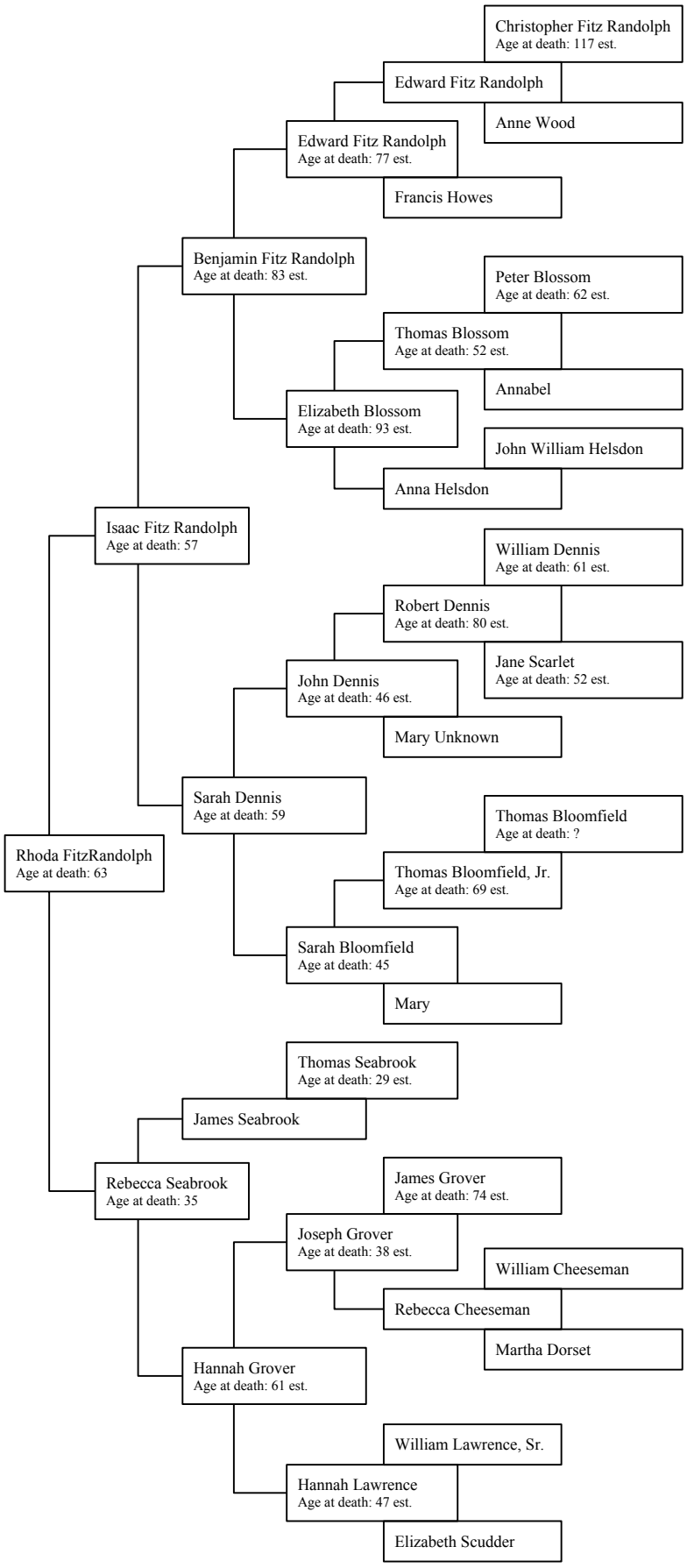
And More Ancestors of Morris Clifford Frazee



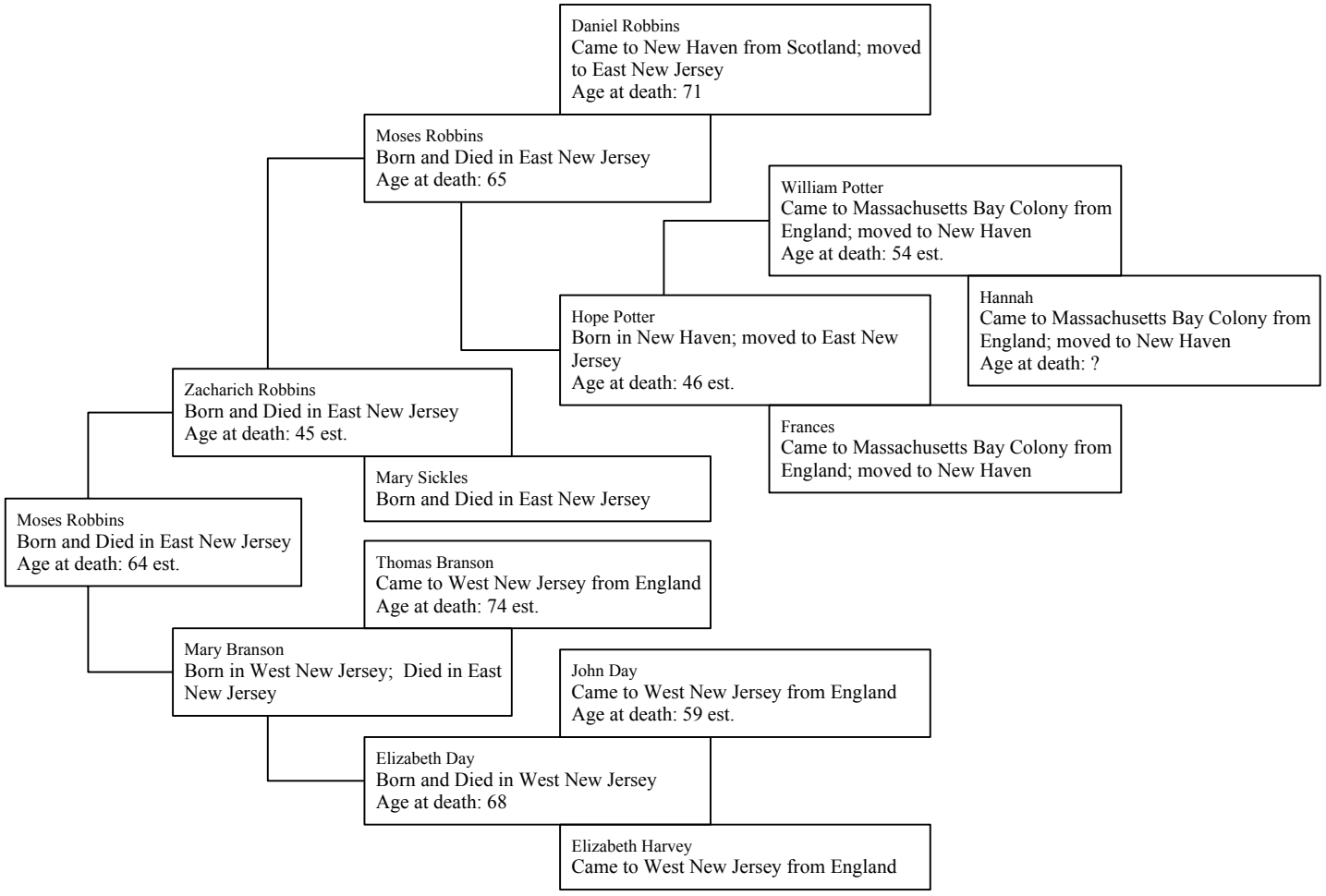
And Some More Ancestors of Morris Clifford Frazee



And Still More Ancestors of Morris Clifford Frazee



Still More Ancestors of Morris Clifford Frazee



Appendix B

Homestead Patents

The United States of America,

To all to whom these presents shall come, Greeting:

Certificate No. 1171.

WHEREAS, MORRIS C. FRAZEE

has deposited in the GENERAL LAND OFFICE of the United States a Certificate of the Register of the Land Office at Williston, North Dakota, whereby it appears that full payment has been made by the said Morris C. Frazee

according to the provisions of the Act of Congress of the 24th of April, 1820, entitled "An Act making further provision for the sale of the Public Lands," and the acts supplemental thereto, for the west half of the southeast quarter and the west half of the northeast quarter of Section eighteen in Township one hundred fifty north of Range ninety-eight west of the Fifth Principal Meridian, North Dakota, containing one hundred sixty acres,

according to the Official Plat of the Survey of the said lands, returned to the GENERAL LAND OFFICE by the Surveyor General, which said Tract has been purchased by the said Morris C. Frazee:

NOW KNOW YE, That the UNITED STATES OF AMERICA, in consideration of the premises, and in conformity with the several Acts of Congress in such case made and provided, HAVE GIVEN AND GRANTED, and by these presents DO GIVE AND GRANT, unto the said Morris C. Frazee and to his heirs, the said Tract above described; TO HAVE AND TO HOLD the same, together with all the rights, privileges, immunities, and appurtenances, of whatsoever nature, thereunto belonging, unto the said Morris C. Frazee and to his heirs and assigns forever; subject to any vested and accrued water rights for mining, agricultural, manufacturing, or other purposes, and rights to ditches and reservoirs used in connection with such water rights, as may be recognized and acknowledged by the local customs, laws, and decisions of courts, and also subject to the right of the proprietor of a vein or lode to extract and remove his ore therefrom, should the same be found to penetrate or intersect the premises hereby granted, as provided by law; and there is reserved from the lands hereby granted, a right of way thereon for ditches or canals constructed by the authority of the United States.

In testimony whereof I, Theodore Roosevelt, President of the United States of America, have caused these letters to be made Patent, and the seal of the General Land Office to be hereunto affixed.

GIVEN under my hand, at the City of Washington, the sixteenth day of December, in the year of our Lord one thousand nine hundred and seven and of the Independence of the United States the one hundred and thirty-second.

(SEAL)

By the President: Theodore Roosevelt

By D. V. Hicks, Assistant, Secretary,

H. Stanfield,

Recorder of the General Land Office.

5—892

Williston 06941

4—1004-R.

The United States of America,

To all to whom these presents shall come, Greeting:

WHEREAS, a Certificate of the Register of the Land Office at Williston, North Dakota,

has been deposited in the General Land Office, whereby it appears that, pursuant to the Act of Congress of May 20, 1862, "To Secure Homesteads to Actual Settlers on the Public Domain," and the acts supplemental thereto, the claim of Theodore Finley

has been established and duly consummated, in conformity to law, for the east half of the northwest quarter and the Lots one and two of Section eighteen in Township one hundred fifty north of Range ninety-eight west of the Fifth Principal Meridian, North Dakota, containing one hundred fifty-two and ninety-four-hundredths acres,

according to the Official Plat of the Survey of the said Land, returned to the GENERAL LAND OFFICE by the Surveyor-General:

NOW KNOW YE, That there is, therefore, granted by the UNITED STATES unto the said claimant the tract of Land above described; TO HAVE AND TO HOLD the said tract of Land, with the appurtenances thereof, unto the said claimant and to the heirs and assigns of the said claimant forever; subject to any vested and accrued water rights for mining, agricultural, manufacturing, or other purposes, and rights to ditches and reservoirs used in connection with such water rights, as may be recognized and acknowledged by the local customs, laws, and decisions of courts; and there is reserved from the lands hereby granted, a right of way thereon for ditches or canals constructed by the authority of the United States; reserving, also, to the United States all coal in the lands so granted, and to it, or persons authorized by it, the right to prospect for, mine, and remove coal from the same upon compliance with the conditions of and subject to the limitations of the Act of March 3, 1909, (35 Stat., 844).

IN TESTIMONY WHEREOF, I, Woodrow Wilson

President of the United States of America, have caused these letters to be made Patent, and the seal of the General Land Office to be hereunto affixed.

GIVEN under my hand, at the City of Washington, the ELEVENTH

(SEAL)

day of SEPTEMBER in the year of our Lord one thousand nine hundred and THIRTEEN and of the Independence of the United States the one hundred and THIRTY-EIGHTH.

By the President: Woodrow Wilson

By M. P. LeRoy Secretary,

John O'Connell Acting Recorder of the General Land Office.

RECORD OF PATENTS: Patent Number 354693

6—2183

Williston 06275

4—1004-R.

The United States of America,

To all to whom these presents shall come, Greeting:

WHEREAS, a Certificate of the Register of the Land Office at Williston, North Dakota,

has been deposited in the General Land Office, whereby it appears that, pursuant to the Act of Congress of May 20, 1862, "To Secure Homesteads to Actual Settlers on the Public Domain," and the acts supplemental thereto, the claim of

Pearl M. Frazee, formerly Pearl M. Finley,

has been established and duly consummated, in conformity to law, for the east half of the northeast quarter and the east half of the southeast quarter of Section twelve in Township one hundred fifty north of Range ninety-nine west of the Fifth Principal Meridian, North Dakota, containing one hundred sixty acres,

according to the Official Plat of the Survey of the said Land, returned to the GENERAL LAND OFFICE by the Surveyor-General:

NOW KNOW YE, That there is, therefore, granted by the UNITED STATES unto the said claimant the tract of Land above described; TO HAVE AND TO HOLD the said tract of Land, with the appurtenances thereof, unto the said claimant and to the heirs and assigns of the said claimant forever; subject to any vested and accrued water rights for mining, agricultural, manufacturing, or other purposes, and rights to ditches and reservoirs used in connection with such water rights, as may be recognized and acknowledged by the local customs, laws, and decisions of courts; and there is reserved from the lands hereby granted, a right of way thereon for ditches or canals constructed by the authority of the United States; reserving, also, to the United States all coal in the lands so granted, and to it, or persons authorized by it, the right to prospect for, mine, and remove coal from the same upon compliance with the conditions of and subject to the limitations of the Act of March 3, 1909, (35 Stat., 844).

IN TESTIMONY WHEREOF, I, Woodrow Wilson

President of the United States of America, have caused these letters to be made Patent, and the seal of the General Land Office to be hereunto affixed.

GIVEN under my hand, at the City of Washington, the SEVENTH day of JANUARY in the year of our Lord one thousand nine hundred and FOURTEEN and of the Independence of the United States the one hundred and THIRTY-EIGHTH.

(SEAL)

By the President: Woodrow Wilson

By M. P. LeRoy Secretary,

L. L. B. Lamar

Recorder of the General Land Office.

RECORD OF PATENTS: Patent Number 375473

6—9183